



AUGUSTA HISTORICAL BULLETIN

**AUGUSTA
COUNTY**
HISTORICAL SOCIETY



AUGUSTA HISTORICAL BULLETIN



VOLUME 53 - 2017



Founded 1964
P.O.Box 686 • Staunton, Virginia 24402-0686
www.AugustaCountyHS.org

VOLUME 53 - 2017

Presidents of the Augusta County Historical Society

*Dr. Richard P. Bell, 1964-1966

*Harry Lee Nash, Jr., 1966-1967

*Dr. Marshall M. Brice, 1967-1968

*Dr. James Sprunt, 1968-1970

*Richard M. Hamrick, Jr., 1970-1972

+Joseph B. Yount III, 1972-1974

*Mrs. William Bushman, 1974-1976

*John M. Dunlap, Jr., 1976-1977

Miss Mary Kathryn Blackwell, 1977-1979

Mrs. Harry D. Hevener, 1979-1981

John M. McChesney, Jr., 1981-1983

Mrs. John E. True, 1983-1985

Edgar R. Coiner, 1985-1987

Charles R. Chittum, 1987-1989

*Mrs. William B. Patterson, 1989-1991

*R. Fontaine McPherson, Jr., 1991-1993

Dr. James B. Patrick, 1993-1995

Dr. Ann McCleary, 1995-1997

Dr. Katharine L. Brown, 1997-1999

Nancy T. Sorrells, 2000-2001

Mary Beirne Nutt, 2002-2003

Dr. Kenneth Keller, 2004-2005

Linda Petzke, 2006-2007

Dr. Katharine L. Brown, 2008-2011

Nancy T. Sorrells, 2012-2013

Linda Petzke, 2014-2015

Charles R. Chittum, 2016-

*Charter Member of Society

+Honorary Charter Member

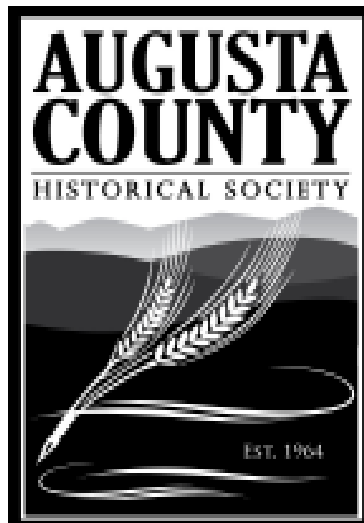
Augusta Historical Bulletin

Published by the

AUGUSTA COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Founded 1964

Post Office Box 686
Staunton, Virginia 24402-0686
www.augustacountyhs.org



Copyright 2018 by the Augusta County Historical Society
ISSN: 0571-8899 *Copies of this annual issue go to all members*
500 copies printed.

Augusta County Historical Society

A purpose of the Augusta County Historical Society is to publish the *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, which is to be sent without charge to all members.

The membership of the society is composed of persons who pay the following dues:

Annual (individual).....	\$35
Annual (family).....	\$50
Annual Institutional.....	\$35

Membership renewal notices are sent out based on the month in which you joined the society.

NOTICE

It is urgent that the society be promptly notified of changes of address. Bulletins that cannot be delivered by the postal service will not be forwarded due to high postage rates.

P.O. Box 686
Staunton, VA 24402-0686
540-248-4151 augustachs@ntelos.net
www.augustacountyhs.org

Augusta County Historical Society office and research library are located on the third floor of the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art at 20 South New Street, Staunton, VA 24401. A parking garage is located across the street.

Cover design by Jennifer Wood

Contents

Dr. DeJarnette's Trunk

By Suzanne Fisher

Page 1

The history of the Thomas-Fields VFW Post 7814

By Melissa Patrick

Page 21

Pragmatic Capitalism: Businessman Michael G. Harman of Staunton, Virginia, 1823-1877

By Dr. Maria Lee

Page 41

Andrew Jackson, Henry Clay, and the 1832 Election in Staunton and Augusta County

By Daniel A. Métraux

Page 54

Brethren during the Civil War: Christian Kline, his sons, the Confederate draft, and their filings with the Southern Claims Commission

By Wayne Diehl

Page 58

Augusta African-American men who served with the Union in the Civil War

By Donna Huffer

Page 75

Augusta Military Academy in WWI

By Morgan Liddick

Page 86

World War I in Staunton and Augusta County

By Allegra Morrison

Page 91

Montgomery Hall: A Plantation and a Park

National Register Nomination

Page 98

Book reviews (By Daniel A. Métraux)

- 1) Edward Ayers, *The Thin Light of Freedom* Page 142
- 2) Laten E. Bechtel, Interviewer, *In Their Words* Page 144
- 3) Andrei Kushnir, *Oh, Shenandoah: Paintings* Page 147
- 4) Gordon Barlow, *Augusta County: Virginia's Western Frontier* Page 149
- 5) William J. Miller, *Decision at Tom's Brook* Page 150

6) Hugh B. Sproul III, <i>Glenmore Hunt</i>	Page 151
7) William B. Pittard, <i>Once Upon A Ridge</i>	Page 152

Books of General Historical Interest

8) David McCullough, <i>The Wright Brothers</i>	Page 153
9) Charles Rappleye, <i>Herbert Hoover</i>	Page 155
10) Cokie Roberts, <i>Capital Dames</i>	Page 156
11) John Strausbaugh, <i>City of Sedition</i>	Page 157
12) Geoffrey Cowan, <i>Let the People Rule</i>	Page 159
13) Adam Krakowski, <i>Vermont Prohibition</i>	Page 160

Recent Acquisitions of the Augusta County Historical Society	Page 162
Index	Page 180
ACHS officers	Page 187
Family Heritage Program	Page 188

Augusta Historical Bulletin: Editorial Policy

The editors of the *Augusta Historical Bulletin* welcome submissions relating to any topic or period in the history of Augusta County, Virginia, and its wider environs. Submissions may take the form of articles, research notes, edited documents, or indexes to historical documents. Other formats might be acceptable, but prospective authors of such submissions are encouraged to consult with a member of the editorial board. With rare exceptions, the *Bulletin* does not publish manuscripts that focus exclusively on genealogical matters. Authors should strive to make their contributions accessible to a broad readership. In matters of form and style, authors should adhere to the guidelines and strictures set forth in the *Chicago Manual of Style*, 15th ed., or Kate L. Turabian, et al., *A Manual for Writers of Term Papers, Theses, and Dissertations*, 6th ed., both of which are widely available in libraries and bookstores. A style sheet, prepared by the editors of the *Bulletin*, is available upon request. Authors should submit four double-spaced copies of their manuscripts, with endnotes where applicable, and include photocopies of any illustrations. Upon acceptance of the manuscript for publication, authors must provide an electronic copy of it, as well as publishable-quality illustrations.

Manuscripts or requests for style sheets should be sent to: The Augusta County Historical Society, Attention: Bulletin Editors, P.O. Box 686, Staunton, Virginia 24402-0686. Please try to submit proposed manuscripts by July 15, 2018. Queries may also be sent to: Nancy Sorrells (lotswife@comcast.net).

Dr. DeJarnette's Trunk

By Suzanne Fisher

Editor's Note: A dusty trunk, stenciled "Dr. J.S. DeJarnette, Staunton, VA," on one side, was the first project presented to Jim Hobin and Suzanne Fisher when they began volunteering at the Augusta County Historical Society archives. The trunk was donated to the historical society in 2011 by James Kivlighan, who found it in the attic of a house he purchased on Sherwood Avenue in Staunton. The house has once been occupied by Dr. Joseph DeJarnette, the longest serving Superintendent of Western State Hospital.

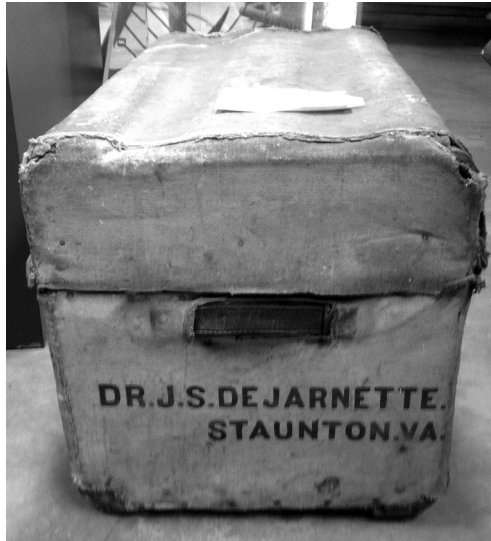
The bulk of the material in the trunk ranges in date from 1889 to approximately 1914, and is a mix of personal, professional, and hospital-related materials. These include photographs, notebooks, correspondence, poems, receipts, check registers, copies of wills, annual bound Western State Hospital reports, articles, newspaper clippings, issues of periodicals and newspapers, and ephemera such as birthday cards and invitations. A later batch of documents relates to the estate of Nanette Hopkins, DeJarnette's sister-in-law, who died in 1938. This article is a fascinating "inside look" at Dr. DeJarnette looking through the lens of the contents of his trunk.

Joseph Spencer DeJarnette was born on September 29, 1866, in Spotsylvania County, the son of Elliott Hayes DeJarnette, formerly a captain in the Confederate Army, and Evelyn May Magruder DeJarnette.

His mother educated him and prepared him to enter the Medical College of Virginia, from which he graduated in 1888. He was hired as Assistant Physician at the Western Lunatic Asylum (after 1894 called Western State Hospital). In 1905 he was appointed superintendent and remained in that position until he retired in 1943. He was involved in the establishment of the Virginia State Epileptic Colony at Lynchburg, Virginia. He was responsible for founding the DeJarnette State Sanatorium in Staunton, a private hospital for paying patients, and was superintendent there from its formation in 1932 until 1947.

Private Life

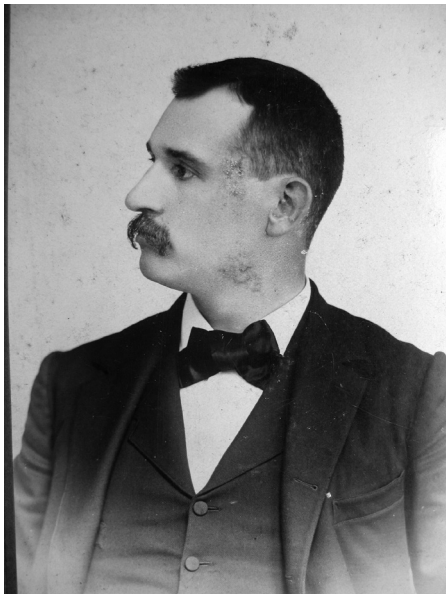
One of the earliest artifacts in the trunk collection, which dates from the first years of DeJarnette's career in Staunton, is a small red notebook with the date 1898 (when he was assistant physician) written on the cover.



Dr. DeJarnette's trunk. (All images are from the Joseph S. DeJarnette collection in the ACHS, Acc. No. 2011.0040.)

You must be a witch to know we wanted baskets.
 Capt. said a week ago - "we really must get a basket;
 but we still kept on toating corn in a bag.
Tout vient à point, à qui sait attendre.
 This is a bit of your family ancestry -
 From La Rochelle - in 1685 - Came 2 Huguenot Brothers
 Ky.
 1) Samuel De Jarnette. { 1) James Dr J - ^{W^a} married Katané
 2) Samuel, Daniel, Joe. { 2) Joe Dr Jarnette + Mary Hampton
 3) James, John, Abijah. { 3) Daniel - Joe, John, Elliott
 4) George + 16 men children { 4) ^{W^a} uncle James - Joe - ^{W^a} nephew
 5) Annie V. Dr J + 7 others. { 5) Cally - Joe - May - Henry etc

Family ancestry chart from DeJarnett's mother's letter (undated).



Chertsey Hopkins DeJarnette and Dr. Joseph S. DeJarnette (undated photos)

1898		1898 J. S. DeJarnette	
List of work		Spent during the year	
1898			\$.
Jan 4-25	cents for carriage		.30
" 8-	R. R. Fare to Richmond & back		8.30
" 9	Street Car Ticket in Richmond		.05
" "	News papers on trip to Richmond		.10
Jan 13-	Stamp		.03
" "	18 cents for apples		.18
" 13	five cents for Goddard paper		.05
" 30	Gave Mrs. for trip to Calley's		3.25
" "	Worship Dr. Jamelle in D.		50.00
Feb. 8-	For Hibernian Entertainment (gift-cnt.)		.00
" 11-	For instrument for Henry	\$7.23 - Freight 30¢ Postage 10¢	7.69
Feb. 17-	For apples		.30
" 22	for Labels for Henry		1.43
" 26	30 cents for apples		.30
" 27	Gave Eve present five dollars		5.00
" 28	Spent two dollars and thirty cents at Calley's		2.30
" 28	five cents for apples ten cents for Raisins		.10

First pages of the red notebook listing daily purchases.

He has inscribed his name on the inside. The first pages are headed "List of What I Spend During the Year." Beginning on January 4, when he spent thirty-five cents on cartridges, he meticulously recorded his daily purchases. On January 8, he paid \$8.20 for railroad fare to Richmond, where he spent five cents on a streetcar ticket and ten cents for newspapers for the trip.

His purchases over the years included ammunition and hunting clothes, a Monarch bicycle, fishing rod, apples, oysters, candy, walnut for a gunstock, and clothing such as suits, shoes, collars, socks, and "drawers" (underwear). He went to the theater, a carnival, and attended a minstrel show. He bought gifts and gave money to his mother, his brother Henry, the church, and to a patient on at least one occasion. Among loose papers inserted in the notebook is one with the sketch of a design for his mother's headstone. She died in 1902. The entries in the notebook end in 1903.

Correspondence

There are a number of letters from business associates, most of them offering advice on investments and others from individuals to whom DeJarnette has loaned money asking for more time to repay him.

Most of the personal correspondence is from his mother and other family members.

DeJarnette's mother writes about her daily life, what's growing in the garden, who's visited, and her health. In an undated letter she includes this chart:

"This is a bit of your family ancestry. From La Rochelle - in 1685 - came 2 Huguenot brothers. One settled in Kentucky and one in Virginia."¹

KY	VA
1) Samuel DeJ	1)James DeJ-married Latané
2) Samuel, Daniel, Joe	2)Joe DeJ + Mary Hampton
3)James, John, Abijah	3)Daniel, Joe, John, Elliotte
4)George & 16 men children	4)Your uncle James-Joe& your father
5)Anne DeJ. & 7 other	5)Cally-Joe-Mary, Henry, etc.

A.G. McDonald wrote to DeJarnette on April 3, 1896, from Santiago, Cuba. McDonald, who addresses DeJarnette as "Dear Friend and Benefactor," recounts his travels "after leaving the asylum." From New York he took passage to Glasgow and from there was reunited with his people, but "as things was dull at home I came down to Glasgow and while knocking

around I met a Captain who was going to Hayti or San Domingo and he give me an invitation to come along. He told me he had six Cubans aboard that was going back to join the revolution." They got to Cuba on a fishing sloop "twenty seven in all well armed and equipped for killing Spaniards but we done little of the latter and I am darn good and sick of it by this time..." He laments that he's tried "every conceivable means of getting out of here but to no purpose the coast is guarded so close and yellow fever has just set in and it is making life intolerable...If I ever escape from here I will call around and see you but I am doubtful of it at present." It's impossible to send mail from Cuba, so he has given letters to an "Englishmans wife who owns a plantation near by and who has obtained a passport to get off the Island" in the hope that she will mail them when she gets to Tampa. He signs the letter "from Your True Friend."

Marriage

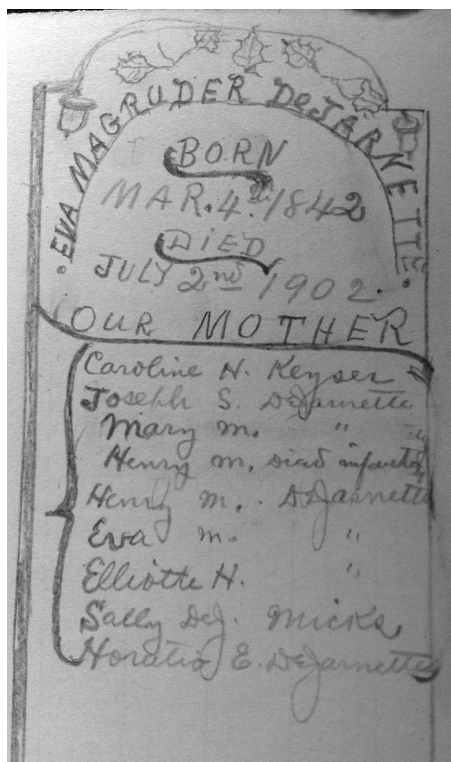
On February 14, 1906, DeJarnette married fellow physician, Chertsey Hopkins, born in Bath County, Virginia, in 1868.

An archivist at the Library of Virginia, which houses the Western State Hospital records and some of DeJarnette's personal files, wrote that Chertsey "is said to have been one of the first licensed female psychiatrists in Virginia. She served as a physician at Western State Hospital from 1894 to 1906. It is believed that Dr. DeJarnette was told that in order to attain the position of superintendent he needed to be a stable, married man. Upon hearing this, he immediately proposed to fellow assistant physician Chertsey Hopkins. However, their marriage meant that the new Mrs. DeJarnette would no longer practice medicine. She resigned her position, two weeks before their wedding."²

Last Years

One of Chertsey's sisters, Nanette Hopkins, died in 1938. DeJarnette, Nanette's sister Orra, and their nephew Francis Calley were executors of her estate. The collection includes estate correspondence between Orra and Francis, an insurance agent in Huntington, West Virginia. In her letters Orra includes news about "Uncle Joe." Orra's tidbits on the household's daily activities are as close as we can get to eavesdropping around the DeJarnette-Hopkins dinner table.

There are some testy exchanges at the beginning. Francis doesn't always sign the estate checks promptly. Orra sends stamps to use for estate



Design for Eva DeJarnette's headstone.

correspondence and to reimburse him for a telephone call, but he returns them saying "I do not want to be reimbursed for trivial amounts that I might care to spend from time to time and which are done more for my own personal satisfaction than for the benefit of the estate..."

They exchange comments about the weather and illnesses. There is flu in Staunton and in the hospital in the winter of 1940, Chertsey suffers from a mysterious digestive ailment, and they receive gifts of hams.

The following are excerpts from Orra's letters to Francis.

November 26, 1938: "My dear Francis:.....On November the 23rd I mailed you eight checks for you to sign and return to me...Uncle Joe says it should not take over 48 hours to have checks signed...The refund to the Western State Hospital for telephones and telegrams should have been paid at the latest yesterday. Uncle Joe has asked for the checks several times...He does not like delays and especially when it comes to the hospital business."

January 14, 1939: "Uncle Joe thinks he will take his part of the 5% of the estate due the executors and, of course, will not use it himself, but is going to give it to me."

July 4, 1939: "The Hospital Board expects to celebrate on July 21st Uncle Joe's 50 years of continuous service at the hospital. Four or five Governors and a few prominent persons will be present and a lunch will be served with speaking on the lawn when the public will be invited."

January 2, 1940: "Uncle Joe was in Washington yesterday in a Psychoatric defense meeting. The other state Supts. were present. The Gov. is endeavoring to prevent the mentally sick from enlisting as was the case in the World War No. 1."

May 3, 1940: "We are depressed over conditions in Europe. We think England made a big blunder."

May 13, 1940: "Uncle Joe goes to Orange tomorrow afternoon to address the Diocese of Virginia on preventions of insanity."

June 17, 1940: "We brought Martha [their servant] to her sister's Friday. She is as thin as a rail but in a far better condition than when we took her to the hospital. Aunt Chertsey and I got off well as they did not make any charge for professional services. The bills rendered came to \$111.80. Every one was most courteous to Martha and to us. It pays to go as Dr. DeJarnette's patient."

June 27, 1940: "We have had a lovely rain last night and this morning. Aunt Chertsey and I have been quite busy making currant jelly spiced currants and raspberry jam...Uncle Joe speaks at Grottoes this evening."

October 5, 1940, from Francis to Orra: "I wish we could have been in Staunton to participate in Uncle Joe's birthday. If I can live one-tenth as useful a life as he has, I will be more than satisfied. To my mind he has a record which has never been equaled."

October 28, 1940: "Last night as Uncle Joe returned from a Temperance speech in a M.E. Church Waynesboro he found that one of the Oliver women had just been killed instantly by an automobile...All of this news together with war news from Europe has depressed us somewhat today."

January 27, 1941: "Please tell Eunice [Francis's wife] if she will give you a

rubber mattress she will be able to keep you at home always. It is the best investment Aunt C. has ever made for Uncle Joe's comforts. He is simply crazy about it. There is no more trouble about getting him to bed now."

March 19, 1941: "We are quite excited today over buying a house. The Haislip house on Sherwood Avenue almost across from Mr. Morton has been offered to Doctor for \$8000. It is a stucco house and the lot goes through to Coalter Street. It has a few fruit trees and a good size garden in the back of the house. Uncle Joe wants it as an investment now and a home later."

March 31, 1941: "It is after three o'clock and we are waiting dinner for Uncle Joe. We will have to stop giving him waffles and eggs Sunday morning for breakfast for they hold him until about four."

April 15, 1941: "Aunt Chertsey and I are loaning Uncle Joe our money to help him pay the bank off. He does not like to owe any one, so the thought is ever with him."

July 22, 1941: "Although I knew I had an idiosyncrasy for fish I could not resist eating some lovely fish Uncle Joe had caught on his recent trip to near Yorktown and I nearly passed out. Uncle Joe came up from the sanatorium and gave me morphine which finally relieved me."

July, 1941: "Uncle Joe is enjoying his lovely Buick."

October 3, 1941: "Uncle Joe had a wonderful birthday and was especially pleased with Aunt Chertsey's poem, which in turn pleased her."

November 1941: "Uncle Joe is going to Richmond...to meet the committee working on a pensioning bill to come up before the Assembly in January. The bill is for the state teachers and employees of the state...If it goes through Uncle Joe will be benefited..."

October 1942: "Uncle Joe was in a court case in Roanoke Monday...He has been in the court in Staunton today and has also examined 10 patients. He says he is not tired."

DeJarnette timeline

DeJarnette's tenure at Western State ended in 1943, but he kept his position as head of the DeJarnette Sanatorium. On November 25, 1943, Orra writes that "Uncle Joe is delighted with his new job and has cut loose from the Western State and has no desire to return. He loves the late morning hours."

In 1944 DeJarnette, Chertsey, and Orra moved to the house at 354 Sherwood Avenue they purchased in 1941.

August 9, 1944: "Uncle Joe thinks he came out well in the Brooke affair with the Board. Formerly he had no authority to say who could visit the Sanatorium and he over-stept his rights, but now the Board allows him to decide who may visit the Sanatorium. Mr. Brooke has to ask for the privilege of seeing any of his parishioners."

It should be noted that this letter is all about Dr. DeJarnette retaliating against Reverend W. Carroll Brooke, rector of Trinity Church in Staunton, who, after visiting patients at Western State, complained to the board about poor conditions and mismanagement at the hospital, including the use of patients as attendants. As a result of Brooke's campaign, DeJarnette was forced to retire from the hospital but kept his position at the sanatorium.

The letters continued: August 21, 1944: "We are getting a few limas, corn, tomatoes and snaps out of our garden...Uncle Joe is greatly interested in a pumpkin vine with one big 'punk' and a number of small ones on it just as we enter our garden...He watches the big 'punk' each day to see how much it has grown."

The estate correspondence ends in 1945. Chertsey died in 1947, and Joseph Spencer DeJarnette died in his Staunton home on Sept. 3, 1957. They are buried in Warm Springs in Bath County.

Crusader for Eugenic Sterilization

DeJarnette was an influential professional man during his working years, but his name has since become toxic because of his involvement with the eugenics movement, whose adherents lobbied for the passage of laws requiring the involuntary sterilization of individuals judged "unfit to reproduce."

After Jim and I began sorting through the papers, we were asked if there were documents that addressed the subject of sterilization. In fact, it seems to have been an early preoccupation of his.

His interest in the subject shows up on an undated torn scrap of paper, something he might have scribbled while riding on a train. It's a

in insane persons		Population	
1870	- 1	3000	
1880	- 1	1937	"
1890	- 1	942	"
1900	- 1	645	"
1910	- 1	400	"
1920	- 1	200	"
1930	- 1	100	"
1940	- 1	50	"
1950	- 1	25	"
1960	- 1	13	"
1970	- 1	6	"
1980	- 1	3	"
1990	- 1	1 1/3	"
2000	- 1	1	"

Approximately if they continue to increase in the 30 years

Chart estimating ratio of insane persons to population at large.

chart illustrating the ratio of "insane persons" to the population at large. He estimated that the number of insane persons would grow from 1 in 3,000 in 1870 to the year 2000 when half the population would be insane, according to his calculations. Along the side he has written "approximately if they continue to increase as in last 30 years."

His "Report of the Superintendent," in the Eighty-first Annual Report of the Board of Directors and of the Superintendent of the Western State Hospital for fiscal year 1907-08, contains a section headed "Prophylaxis," in which he writes "prevention is far better than cure. This is especially true in the treatment of the insane, as heredity has been variously estimated to be the cause of from thirty to fifty percent...I believe that the marriage relation between the unfit...should be prohibited by law...Some writers actually recommend sterilization of this class."³

In the report for the following fiscal year (1908-09), he increases his estimate of the percentage of cases of insanity caused by heredity to fifty percent and continues to recommend prohibition of marriage between "the unfit" and "in some cases sterilization."

Under the heading "Prophylaxis," he writes "In such diseases as insanity and epilepsy, where medical treatment is so unsatisfactory as to permanent recovery, prevention is the only scientific known cause of about fifty per cent. of these diseases, and by preventing reproduction by the unfit we can in a great degree diminish their number....The above methods may seem to be harsh, but by allowing these classes to reproduce it not only multiplies the class, but makes them perpetual. It is a crime against their offspring and a burden to their State for such to reproduce."⁴

In a handwritten manuscript which appears to be the draft of an annual report, undated but probably written in 1911 (because he mentions his "22 years connection with the Western State Hospital") he reiterates his claim that treatment of the mentally ill is unsatisfactory, writing that it is "being gradually relegated to a very secondary position." He goes further than he did in earlier reports to recommend sterilization for "all weaklings."

He focuses on the cost to the state rather than the well-being of patients, writing that "Virginia spends annually approximately \$500,000 in treating her insane in the state hospitals & has been spending large amounts for years in this way."

With no obvious basis for his statistics other than his speculative doodling, he claims

...if we could prevent the marriage relation of this class for one generation we could reduce the number of epileptics in the state now numbering 4000 to about 2200 - Our insane who number about 5000 to about 3500 - The number of the above are steadily increasing, making a total reduction of the epileptic & insane of about 4000 in 20 years by preventing reproduction among themselves.

In these documents, we see the hardening of his eugenics philosophy, from "some writers recommend sterilization" in 1908 to the radical pronouncement "Sterilization of all weaklings should be performed" three years later. And we see his opinion, incongruous coming from the superintendent of a psychiatric hospital, that "medical treatment of insanity is extremely unsatisfactory & is being gradually relegated to a very secondary position."

These beliefs were the impetus for years of lobbying, together with other superintendents of mental hospitals, for a law authorizing forced eugenic sterilization. Their campaign succeeded in 1924 when the legislature passed the Virginia Sterilization Act.⁵

DeJarnette never wavered in his support for eugenics, neither when it was discredited as a pseudoscience and lost adherents, nor after the Nazis passed a forced sterilization act in 1933. In fact DeJarnette praised the Germans for their zeal. In a January 16, 1934, article in the *Richmond Times Dispatch*, he complained that "The Germans are beating us at our own game."⁶

In a typewritten paper, "Sterilization Law of Virginia," DeJarnette boasted that he, "the present writer was the first in the State of Virginia, so far as he can learn, to recommend sexual sterilization in selected cases." The paper is undated, but in the last paragraph he says, "In Virginia we have sterilized to January 1, 1935, in round numbers 2000 - about one-tenth of all legal sterilization in the United States. Estimating each patient would have fifty descendants in five generations we will have eliminated in that period 100,000 more or less defective possibilities from our state." Sterilization of the unfit is "the sole practical solution of the problem of the betterment of the human race," he writes.⁷

"The Drug and Liquor Curse"

Two other preoccupations of Dr. DeJarnett's were the treatment of "inebriates," meaning those who drink alcohol in excess or those who are addicted to drugs, and the uncontrolled distribution of opiates by pharmacies.

A handwritten draft from the trunk headed "State Colonization of Inebriates," begins: "Ever since the days of Noah alcohol has been a curse to mankind...The evil influence of liquor is felt, in practically every family in the land and it seems to strike an[d] destroy usefulness of the best of our citizens in greater proportion than the mediocre...It is connected with over 94 per cent of crimes and murders and is the father of all kinds of vice..."

His solution:

A Colony for inebriates should be established in the state where the drunkard can be taken in time and after the buildings are put up the institution can be made practically self supporting at the same time the inebriate will be kept sober and instead of a deadbeat and disgrace to his family he will have an opportunity of redeeming himself and a chance to save his soul in the world to come.

Last year 1913 about 8000 were imprisoned in Va for drunkenness 155 inebriated were received in the three white hospitals for the insane and they cost the State 125 dollars per cap. to care for making a total of 19,375.00. Now if these persons could have been put into a Colony for inebriates they could have been made self supporting...

In a typed letter to Dr. J.T. Martin, Secretary, Richmond, Va., dated November 6, 1913, he outlines points "to put in our reports for this year,

The image shows the first page of a handwritten draft titled "State Colonization of Inebriates". The handwriting is in cursive and somewhat faded. The text reads: "State Colonization of Inebriates. We have drunkenness but not the drunkard is just a man needed a guide &c. Ever since the days of Noah alcohol has been a curse to man kind, The old sailor said it is influence".

First page of "Colonization of Inebriates" draft.

and if the legislature established the colony we can then make specific laws in detail." He suggests "a colony for white inebriates be established as a branch of one of the state hospitals for the insane," and concludes that "the inebriate should be committed by due process of law," after being examined by a commission "composed of one magistrate and two physicians."

What DeJarnette seems to be envisioning is a workhouse, where those arrested for drunkenness will be kept for a period of six months, with a yearlong stay for repeat offenders. While he recognizes that drug and alcohol addiction are a "curse," he sees "only two practical ways to treat this condition one is to stop its distribution and the other is to confine the drunkard as soon as the habit is established." His solution is to lock them up, repeatedly, if necessary.

DeJarnette observed that addictive substances such as opium and laudanum were too readily available from pharmacies and advocated for stronger state regulation. In the trunk are copies of substance control laws from other states and drafts for proposed legislation for Virginia.

He writes:

Church & Peterson say...Morphine is, among the alkaloids the most frequent cause of insanity. It is a sad commentary on the heedlessness of some medical men but the family physician is responsible in almost every case of development of the morphine habit. It should be looked upon as a sin to give a dose of morphine for insomnia or for any pain... which is other than extremely severe and transient.

In "The Drug and Liquor Curse," an undated handwritten manuscript written on Western State Hospital letterhead (there is also a typed version in the collection), he gives statistics on the amount of opium (462,462 pounds) and morphine (13,825 ounces) imported into the U.S. in 1911. "It seems almost incredible that we can consume so much in a legitimate manner," he says.

But when we remember there are thousands of fiends taking the drug and the habitues are steadily being recruited & the deserters are few... we can see it is time to make an active fight against its use. Therefore we should guard the prescribing, & dispensing of the drug in every way... By preventing the habit it will save the State money...A very strict law for handling the habit-forming drugs should be passed, and an active detective service should be instituted, as the fraudulent purchase and sale of these drugs are very difficult of detection...

Letters from Patients

There were several letters from hospital patients in the trunk. An indignant letter to DeJarnette from patient Evelyn Pifer, dated October 9, 1912, entreats him to allow her to do her own shopping.

This thing of living such a confining and restricted life is simply, a miserable existence to me, and - terribly mean, in those in author-

ity over me, here. What wrong did I do - to suffer confinement? I would never talk about the people here - nor, - say one thing against the people - here, - to anyone in town, - if I am allowed to go, - whenever I wish to go. - Perhaps, it may be because I slapped Edith Landes this past Summer (in the early Summer), - but, - under the circumstances, - I could not help it, - as she was so mean, - and, - worried me to such an extent...The reason I slapped her, - Fannie Mitchell got the (floor) brush - after dinner, - and began rubbing the hall, - near my door, and I was lying down, - and trying to rest, - and the rubbing annoyed me so, that I could not rest; and, - I asked Fannie Mitchell to stop it, - and E. Landes stepped out and told me not to interfere, and to let Fannie rub the floor wherever she wished - and let Fannie alone, - that she would lock me in my room...and, - I told her that I would slap her if she put her hands on me And, she took hold of me to lock me in my room and, - I slapped her, - ever so many times (justly), and, - she called other patients...and rudely pushed me in my room, - and locked the door, - leaving me angry with indignation, - at such low, mean conduct, and, - frightened, too. - This way of doing has been going on ever since I have been here. And these exciting fusses, and quarrels nearly kill us, - and ruin our health, - (what we have). Yet, - we can't avoid them, - because the Attendants do not enforce order, - and right conduct, on the hall, and we are so very imposed upon, - often, that we cannot help it; and, I do hate to quarrel with these Attendants, - as I feel that it is so very lowering to me, - and so beneath me - and so wrong for a lady to have to be made to fuss, and quarrel.

A March 9, 1891 letter is written in elegant script and decorated with delicate drawings by Nathan A. Crabill and addressed to his "dear wife and dear little children and all that live on the earth." He tells them

I prayed to the Father of heaven to be with you all, but it is all love joy and pleasure and happiness and piece and a long life up here in heaven with my Father and all the glorifide angles of the great sitty of the new Jerusalem, and now how do you all feel down there on that beautiful green earth that you all call you're homes...

He describes an apocalyptic vision

when Jesus Christ will come the second time to destroy the hole world with fire and brimstone...and it will be wise to be ready to meet the lord Jesus Christ when he comes for there will be eartquakes and thunder that will shake the houses down and tear up the trees...Nathan A. Crabill is no more, for when he comes he will be in the naim of Jesus Christ to save you all from hel and hel fire and take you all in heaven to live in happiness love and joy forever with your father and the holly angles in heaven so I will close for this time.

On the last page he has drawn trees and labeled them:

"John Crabill this is the tree of happiness."

"Silas Crabill this is the tree of piece and be glad."

"Jesus Christ is the tree of life to save you all in heaven..."

"Nathan A. Crabill this is the tree of death.

At the top of one poignant letter from a patient, DeJarnette has written "letter from a boy 14 years old, July 8, 1897," and signed his name.

My Dear Father

It seem to be a long time sence I seen you & I think it will be longer & what it has been. I dont think I will get to see you anymore in this world & I dont expect to meet in the next world to come for I am going on the road to hell I want to go to the deavel anyway for I cant stay at home... & the first canch I get I am going to kill my self I had rather to be in hell & be heare for I cant get out to see anybody...hear I am at a worse pace then hell... Tell dam old Dave Woodson I hope I will meet him in hell when he die...I dont beleave the people here are send my letters to you... I hope when the people die hear they will go to hell for there dam meansy to every man.

Willard Carson

Remember that this shocking letter was found in the personal papers of Dr. DeJarnette – one of the men who oversaw the place the boy described as hell. When we came across these letters, Jim and I asked each other, "Why did DeJarnette have these in his home?" It is obvious that he monitored patients' mail.

Legal Cases

DeJarnette took on professional jobs outside of his position at the

hospital. He worked as a consultant, hired by courts or defense lawyers to examine accused individuals to determine if they were insane at the time of their alleged crimes. In the case of murder they could be sent to the electric chair if judged sane. There are several notebooks and legal pads filled with detailed handwritten notes from his examinations.

DeJarnette was one of three doctors who examined Harvey D. Looney, accused of murdering Oscar Martin, the Town Sergeant of New Castle, in 1912. The case was heard in Craig County Circuit Court, and, judging from the newspaper coverage, drew much attention. Among DeJarnette's papers are several affidavits from relatives and townspeople who knew Looney. One of his brothers, L.L. Looney, described him as "a disobedient boy easily provoked and disrespectful to his parents. He could not say that he thought H.D. insane but always thought there must be something wrong with him because he did things he ought not to have done." J.W. Caldwell, ex-sheriff, states he has "no feeling against him [Looney] though he tried to kill him once. Doubted whether he was mentally right."

DeJarnette's notes from his examination record Looney's account of the killing. "Before the crime he had been drinking about couple weeks, drank most all the time...Says he was about 1/2 drunk when the killing occurred...Ate dinner at home that day came back to town...Got with some fellows at Craig City (2 or 3) drank up a pint whiskey - then went and got

Written by a boy 14 years old
July 8th 1897.
J. DeJarnette. Stanton, Va.
July. 8 1897

Dear Father

It seem to be a long
sence I seen you. & I think it will
longer & what it has been. I dont think
I got to see you any more in this
& I dont expect to meet in the next
to come. for I am going on the road

Willard Carson's July 8, 1897, letter to his father.

more..." He encountered Martin, who told Looney he had a warrant for his arrest. When Looney fled, Martin shot at him. Looney returned fire. "He and Oscar had never had any fuss thought they were good friends - Does not know what was going to be arrested for unless it was for getting drunk."

Looney was convicted of murder in the first degree and received the death sentence. His attorneys appealed to the State Supreme Court, which ordered a new trial. He was sent to the Asylum for Criminal Insane in Marion, where the doctors declared him sane. He was convicted in a new trial; however, he escaped from New Castle jail in April 1914.⁸

The scandalous trial of the Strother brothers received extensive and lurid press coverage. James and Philip Strother shot and killed their sister's husband, William Bywaters, an hour after the two were married (Bywaters is described in newspaper accounts as a "compulsory bridegroom").⁹

It is not clear whether DeJarnette testified in court; however, among his papers is a letter from Jno. L. Lee of Culpeper, Va, dated February 24, 1907. Mr. Lee says his letter will be hand delivered to DeJarnette by Dr. W.J. Strother, uncle of "the young Strother boys, who are about to be put on trial here for the killing of their sister's seducer. We desire to show by an expert that the terrific strain and mental anguish to which these young men were subjected was well calculated to and doubtless did temporarily dethrone their reason and render them irresponsible for their action...I do trust you may see your way clear to being of service to us in this matter. I know exactly how you feel towards these young men: that you fully approve of their course and that you will do all in your power to be of service."

DeJarnette responded the following day: "We doctors recognize also a form of insanity in which the knowledge of right and wrong may be present, but the will so impaired that it cannot control the act. Now as to the instructions, that the accused on account of great injustice done their sister, were so wrought up that they were incapable of restraining themselves: I believe such could be the case...I think it is a perfectly justifiable case of homicide, and one which any proud man would do under like circumstances."

The Strother brothers were found not guilty. A March 9, 1907, article in *The Free Lance*, says "Judge Harrison brought matters to a climax by upholding the unwritten law." He told the jurors: "Your verdict, gentlemen, has followed the precedents of American juries...Law books may lay down correct doctrines, but American juries will not punish a man who kills another, if that other, by aggravating and damnable treachery invades the sanctity of his home circle and destroys its peace...." ¹⁰

The Public and Private DeJarnette

Jim and I lived with the trunk and its contents for a long time, and as a result we formed opinions about DeJarnette the man. He was domineering in his domestic and professional life; he was fixated on finances, both his own and public funds; he insisted on being in control.

The excerpts from the DeJarnette papers quoted here, as well as other documents in the trunk, reveal a man with tremendous self-assurance and a remarkable lack of self-doubt who labeled the people he was charged to care for “unfit, poor unfortunates, weaklings, and fiends.” He showed at least as much concern for saving money for the state by promoting laws to control patients and lock up addicts as he did for treating them, and he used his power and authority to reinforce the social hierarchy to the point of victimizing the mentally ill and the poor.

Endnotes

¹Unnumbered quoted passages are from documents in the Joseph S. DeJarnette papers, Augusta County Historical Society, Acc. No. 2011.0040.

²Jessie Graham, “Two Faces: The Personal Files of Dr. Joseph S. DeJarnette,” in *Out of the Box: Notes of the Archives @ The Library of Virginia*, http://www.virginiamemory.com/blogs/out_of_the_box/2012/09/19/ (accessed October 19, 2017)

³*Eighty-first Annual Report of the Board of Directors and of the Superintendent of the Western State Hospital of Virginia (At Staunton) for the Fiscal Year Ending September 30, 1908* (Richmond: Davis Bottom, Superintendent of Public Printing, 1908), 10.

⁴*Eighty-Second Annual Report of the Board of Directors and of the Superintendent of the Western State Hospital of Virginia (At Staunton) for the Fiscal Year Ending September 30, 1909* (Richmond: Davis Bottom, Superintendent of Public Printing, 1909), 17.

⁵Adam Cohen, *Imbeciles: The Supreme Court, American Eugenics, and the Sterilization of Carrie Buck* (New York: Penguin Press, 2016), 90.

⁶Paul A. Lombardo, *Three Generations, No Imbeciles: Eugenics, the Supreme Court, and Buck v. Bell* (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 2008), 209.

⁷J.S. DeJarnette, “Sterilization Law of Virginia,” photocopy, Augusta County Historical Society, Acc. No. 824, administrative file.

⁸“Harvey D. Looney Makes His Escape,” *The Times Dispatch* (Richmond, Va.), April 25, 1914, <http://chroniclingamerica.loc.gov/> (accessed October 12, 2017)

⁹“Jury to Probe Bywater’s Death,” *The Times Dispatch* (Richmond, Va.), December 19, 1906, <http://chroniclingamerica.loc.gov/> (accessed October 12, 2017)

¹⁰“Culpeper Verdict: The Unwritten Law Upheld,” *The Free Lance* (Fredericksburg, Va.), March 9, 1907, <http://chroniclingamerica.loc.gov/> (accessed October 12, 2017)

The history of the Thomas-Fields VFW Post 7814

By Melissa Patrick

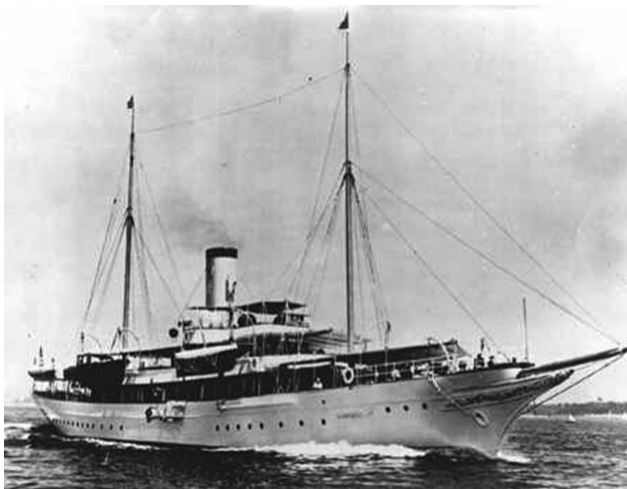
Melissa Patrick, is a Staunton native who spent her career in the U.S. Army, gaining the rank of colonel. After retirement, she returned to Staunton and joined the Thomas-Fields Veterans of Foreign Wars (VFW) Post 7814. She is now the VFW District 11 Commander. Her interest in history led her to put together this story of her post in honor of its seventieth anniversary. This article comes from a presentation that she did about the post.

On the seventieth anniversary of the Thomas-Fields VFW Post 7814, it is appropriate that we take some time to review its history because its story is an unusual one and it is a tale from which we can learn. The history of this post is also an important part of the story of our nation and our local community. Right up front, we have to face the fact that the founding of this particular VFW Post is rooted in the ugliness of our past with segregation and its Jim Crow laws.

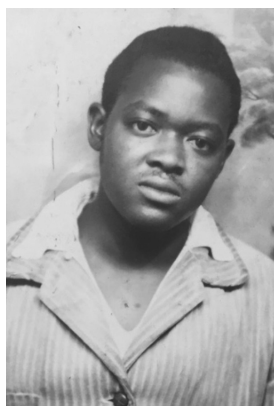
On December 7, 1941, when the Japanese attacked our fleet at Pearl Harbor, American society in the South was deeply divided by segregation and discrimination. The attack on Pearl Harbor galvanized American society, including the local African-American community. Some young African-American men such as Paige Kier immediately enlisted in the armed forces. Others, such as Oliver Tate, were called to serve initially in the war mobilization effort such as shipbuilding in Newport News. Still others such as CR Lee Ratliff were drafted for the Army or the Navy. All of the armed forces were segregated at this time.

As veterans of World War II returned to their home towns, they were welcomed back and invited to join the veterans' service organizations such as the Veterans of Foreign Wars. But for those African-American veterans who had served, there was no warm welcome home in their local communities. Here in the Staunton-Augusta area, the African-American servicemen who had fought overseas came back to a segregated society; and were not allowed to join the local VFW posts in the area.

Rather than accept that discrimination and be excluded from the VFW or from recognition for their service, they applied for and received a charter to organize their own post. VFW Post 7814 was organized on July 6, 1946, at



Charles Thomas was the officer's cook on the Patrol Yacht USS Cythera.



Cyrus Glenwood Fields, above, and his tombstone, left, at the National Cemetery..

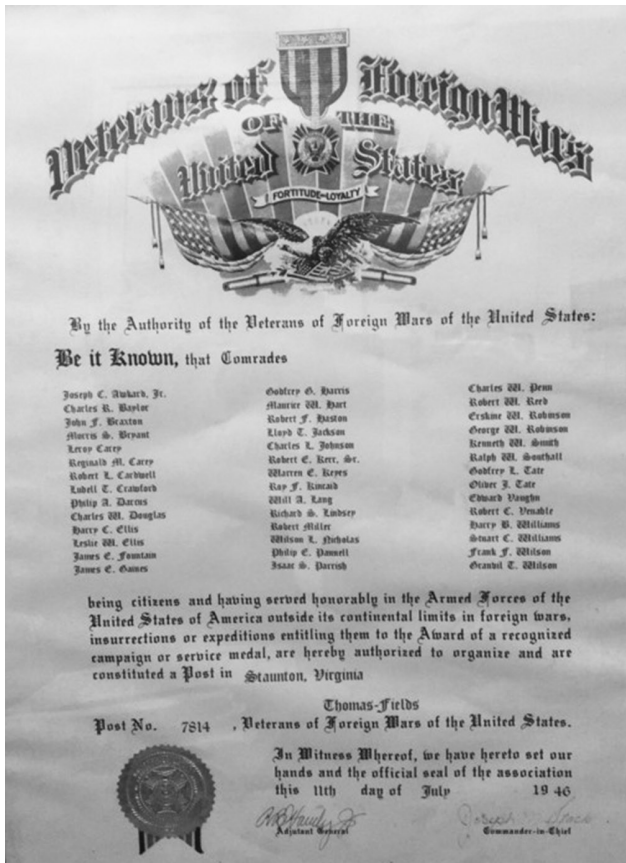
Johnson Hall, 21 East Frederick Street, Staunton, Virginia, with forty-two charter members.

The post was named the Thomas-Fields Post in memory of Charles Thomas and Glenwood Fields, two African-American residents of Staunton who lost their lives in World War II. Charles Thomas was the officer's cook on the Patrol Yacht *USS Cythera*. At 12:47 a.m. on May 2, 1942, the patrol yacht *USS Cythera* (PY-26), broken into two sections during a torpedo attack, slid beneath the waters of the cold North Atlantic. She had been at sea just twenty-one hours forty-five minutes, bound from Norfolk, Virginia, to Pearl Harbor, Hawaii. It was initially assumed by the U.S. Navy that all seventy-one crew members had been lost and their families were notified on June 2, 1942, of their "missing status."¹ Thomas went down with the

ship, as did all but two crewmembers, who were picked up by the U-boat and spent the remainder of the war in captivity in Germany.

The other namesake of the post, Cyrus Glenwood Fields was killed in a motor vehicle accident on Christmas Day 1944 in Ahvaz, Iran. Private Fields was assigned as a Quartermaster Corps truck driver to the Motor Transport Service of the Persian Gulf Command, which operated the supply line from the Persian Gulf to the Caspian Sea over which Lend Lease supplies reached the Soviet Union. He was one of 30,000 soldiers who operated this now forgotten mission. Among those 30,000 soldiers were 4-5,000 black troops who drove trucks, built roads, operated the ports, and delivered more than 400,000 tons of freight to the Soviet Army.² PVT Fields was at Camp Quarry, three miles west of Ahvaz, when he was killed. He was temporarily buried in Algeria, until he could be reinterred in June 1948 in the National Cemetery on Richmond Road.³

A study of the wartime service of some of the post members reveals



The Thomas-Fields Post Charter



Johnson Hall

much about African-American military service in general. The African-American naval crew members of 7814 served in the Atlantic, Caribbean, Mediterranean, and Pacific Oceans. Most of the men who served in the Navy were assigned as cooks and mess stewards, taking care of the white officers aboard ship. While this sounds safe and mundane enough, the experience of CR Lee Ratliff, who served in both the Atlantic and the Caribbean, reveals that such duty could be fraught with danger and combat action. Initially, he served aboard the destroyer USS *Pillsbury*, where he and the other African-American crew aboard manned a 20mm AA gun during Action Stations. CR Lee was the second loader for the crew. When a new skipper took over the ship, he took them off the gun and relegated them to duties below decks. Ratliff was on board the *Pillsbury* when the destroyer tracked and sank the U-515 in April 1944. The *Pillsbury* tracked the submerged U-boat for about eight hours with the men at their action stations, without a break. In the early morning hours of Easter Sunday, the U-515 surfaced and fired a torpedo. The *Pillsbury* and airplanes attacked and sank the U-boat. The *Pillsbury* then picked up forty-six German sail-



Lee Ratliff and his ship, the USS Pillsbury.

ors, who were later transferred to the carrier *Guadalcanal*. Ratliff said: "I'll never forget that Easter Sunday as long as I live." The next day, the ship sank another sub and picked up one dead sailor and one living U-boat sailor. After leaving the *USS Pillsbury*, he was assigned to the ATR-21, an ocean-going rescue tug based at Guantanamo Bay, Cuba, which gave him the opportunity to really enjoy the duty in the Caribbean.⁴

Robert Parrish had just turned twenty-one years old when the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. Inducted into the U.S. Navy on June 28, 1943, he was assigned as a Steward's Mate 1st Class on the *USS Dextrous*, an Auk-class minesweeper, which earned five battle stars in WWII. During his time aboard the *Dextrous*, she supported the amphibious landings at Salerno, Italy, and the landings on the Anzio beachhead, the scene of one of the most courageous and bloody dramas of the war where the Germans threw attack after attack against the beachhead in an effort to drive the landing force into the sea. The *Dextrous* swept mines prior to the assault and patrolled and provided anti-aircraft fire in support of the landing forces during the bitter fighting ashore. During this time of great danger, Parrish began to read the Bible daily, a practice which he continued until his death. In July 1944, Steward's Mate 1st Class Robert Parrish was assigned to the newly commissioned *USS Moctobi*, an ocean-going tug boat that served in the Pacific theater of operations in 1944-1945. Based at Ulithi atoll, she served at sea during the Iwo Jima and Okinawa campaigns, providing at sea logistics support for ships of the 5th Fleet. She also served



Robert Parrish and his ship, the USS Moctobi.

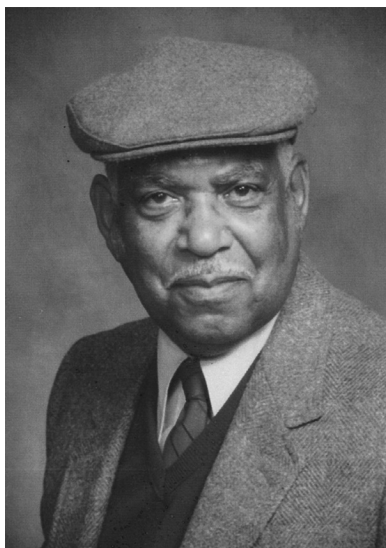
at sea during the closing weeks of the war and aided in the landing of initial occupation forces in the Tokyo area. On September 2, 1945, the *USS Moctobi*, with Steward's Mate Robert Parrish aboard, was one of two fleet ocean tugs present in Tokyo Bay for the formal surrender of Japan. Parrish continued to serve until discharged in March 1946.

Two other post members served in the Navy in the Pacific. Howard Clayborne joined the Navy in May 1943 and served in the South Pacific. And charter member Warren Keyes, rather than serving onboard ship, was stationed at the Naval Supply Depot on Manus Island in the Admiralty Islands of the Southwest Pacific. The massive Naval Supply Depot on Manus was capable of supporting both 7th Fleet and the Pacific Fleet.

"While most African Americans serving at the beginning of the war were assigned to non-combat units and relegated to service duties, such as supply, maintenance, and transportation, their work behind front lines was ...vital to the war effort."⁵ Although there were African-American combat units, such as the 92d and 93d Divisions, which saw combat in Italy and the Pacific respectively, and the famed 761st Tank Battalion with George Patton's 3rd Army, seventy-eight percent of the 909,000 African-Americans who served in the Army and Army Air Corps were in the service branches of the engineers, quartermaster, and transportation.⁶ The men of Staunton, Waynesboro, and Augusta served in jobs such as clerks, drivers, cooks, ammo handlers, and mechanics. Yet despite being excluded from direct combat roles, many of them did see plenty of combat action. One of the first local African-American men to volunteer was Paige Kier, who enlisted the



Warren Keyes



Howard Clayborne

day after the attack on Pearl Harbor, which was six days after his eighteenth birthday. Inducted at the end of December, Kier went through a series of training stations for the next year and a half until shipping out to the Pacific theater in May 1943 and arriving on New Guinea in August. Serving as a cook in the 1963d Quartermaster Truck Co., attached to the 5th Army Air Force, Kier was awarded the Bronze Star medal for heroism exhibited while under fire during a Japanese fighter plane strafing attack on his unit. During that event, Kier was injured and had to be medically evacuated.

Walter Mason Lewis also experienced combat on New Guinea. He entered active service on December 29, 1942, and shipped out for the Asia Pacific Theatre of operations in 1943, arriving in New Guinea on July 24, 1943, just three weeks after the start of Douglas MacArthur's campaign to isolate and defeat the Japanese 18th Army. Assigned to the 579th Ordnance Ammunition Company, Mason experienced the hardships of jungle operations, including surviving bouts of malaria. Fighting and combat operations in New Guinea were intense and were some of the most difficult conditions that the U.S. Army experienced in WWII. Lewis participated in an amphibious landing as part of the liberation of the Philippines, scrambling down the cargo net on the side of the ship, jumping into the landing craft bobbing on the waves, and landing on the beaches of the island of Leyte. The fighting was so intense and the demand for ammunition for the guns so great that they issued the ammunition straight out of the backs of the trucks, rather than unloading it properly.⁷



Paige Kier and his medals, including his Bronze Star.



They served in all theaters of operations, with some such as Herbert Casey being among the few who served in both Europe and the Pacific. Casey was drafted at the beginning of 1944. His basic training in a segregated company at Camp Ellis, Illinois, was typical of the Army at the time. His unit had both black and white drill sergeants, but the officers were white. All facilities were segregated with separate mess halls, gyms, and PX's. In the local community, black soldiers could not go into the stores except through the back entrance. While at Camp Ellis, Casey was involved in several race riots; in one case there were three in one night. The race riots were generally mass fist fights between the races and did not involve property damage. PFC Casey served as a truck driver in the 1333d Engineer General Service Regiment in southern France from November 1944 until July 1945 when he shipped with his unit to Okinawa.⁸ After two-and-a-half years working in the shipyards, Oliver Tate joined the Army in 1944. Like Herbert Casey, T/5 Oliver Tate also served on Okinawa as an



Walter M. Lewis and his medals.

automotive mechanic and winch operator with the 136th Port Company. Meanwhile, CPL Daniel Wormsley served in the China-Burma-India theater of operations where over sixty percent of the 15,000 soldiers involved in building the 271-mile Ledo Road were African-American. “The Ledo Road is considered a wartime engineering miracle due to the obstacles that were presented. Six African-American companies, a headquarters, service, and four combat engineer units, did most of the construction.”⁹ And as mentioned previously, Glenwood Fields served in the Persian Gulf Command.

Those who entered service at the end of the war, still encountered a segregated military system, despite the service of over a million African Americans in the military and the accomplishments of African Americans such as the famed Tuskegee Airmen. James Becks enlisted in the Army Air Corps in November 1945, going through training in Goldsboro, N.C., where he encountered his first race riot. When traveling from Goldsboro to his basic training camp in Wichita, Texas, he experienced the injustice of not being allowed to get off the train to get something to eat at stops in southern towns, but the white soldiers could get off. In Texas, he experienced his second race riot where the military police used hoses on the men. When shipped out to Europe in 1946, he again experienced inequities in treatment with the white soldiers, being transported in box cars with no seats from Le Havre, France, to Landsberg Airfield, Bavaria, while his white counterparts were flown to their final destination. His unit was officered by black officers, with one senior lieutenant, who was white, in command.



Herbert Casey



Oliver Tate

Yet, this assignment at Landsberg Air Ammunition Depot afforded him with his first mixed race experience. Although the black soldiers could not go into white facilities such as the local club, they played together on the athletic teams and got along well. When discharged from the Army Air Force in 1948, Becks saw some very small signs of greater acceptance for blacks when he was allowed to travel in the same train car with whites and was allowed to enter the dining car. Upon his return to Staunton, he was allowed to go into several white stores that he would not have been allowed in before his military service. Yet, on the whole, little was changed.¹⁰

Although President Harry Truman issued Executive Order 9981 on July 26, 1948, ordering the integration of the armed services, segregation continued in Virginia for many more years. Numerous African-American men served honorably and with distinction in the Korean War, only to return to face discrimination at home. By now, African Americans were assigned to the full range of combat missions. One such person was PFC Landon Pendleton who served with the 5th Regimental Combat Team, 24th Infantry Division. Although his basic and advanced training were segregated, he encountered an integrated world when he got to Camp Stoneman, California, while waiting to ship out to Korea. Upon arrival in Korea, he was assigned to Company B, 5th RCT where he was the only black soldier in his squad, serving with men from Georgia and Arkansas. He considered them all good guys and had no problem with them.¹¹ He was awarded the Bronze Star for heroism on October 13, 1951,



James Becks

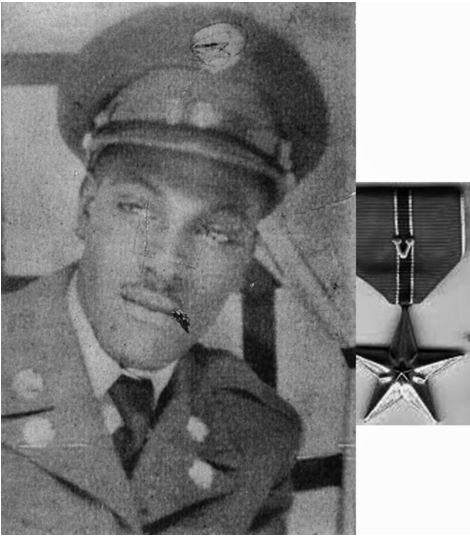


Robert Lewis

during combat against the Chinese near Pangdong-ni. His award citation talks about attacking “through strong enemy positions, advancing through a hail of small arms, automatic weapons, mortar and artillery fire,” during which time, PVT Pendleton, who had become the squad leader, “exposed himself to intense enemy fire to lead his men in the attack.” He volunteered as the company messenger, “with complete disregard for his own safety, as he went from unit to unit” delivering messages. Upon completing that mission, he “directed friendly mortar fire on enemy bunkers and machine gun emplacements which were holding up a platoon’s advance.”¹²

Yet when PFC Pendleton was discharged from the Army and returned home, he found that Staunton was the same as when he left. Most galling, he was denied the opportunity to attend training for radio and TV repair at Valley Vocational Technical School solely because of his skin color. Other post members who served in the Korean War were CPL Charles Dunning and PVT Calvin Johnson both of whom served in the field artillery. Dunning served with the 780th Field Artillery firing eight inch shells and Johnson served with the 160th FA BN.

When the Vietnam War began, the military was fully integrated, but southern society was not. All of our Vietnam veterans were schooled in segregated schools such as Booker T. Washington High School, Central Augusta High School, and the Augusta County Training School. When they went into the military, they went through integrated training and



Landon Pendleton and his Bronze Star.



Charles Dunnings



Charles Dunnings in the field showing the 8-inch gun of the 780th Field Artillery in action.

served in integrated units. Joe Walker recalls that it wasn't until he got into the service that he fully realized the impacts of segregation. As he said, "I stayed in my place until I went in the service and that's when things changed." Yet, when assigned to Fort Bragg, N.C., he found himself living in a segregated society off post in Fayetteville. And in one incident in the early 1960s, the black officers and NCOs were not allowed to go into town when they were deployed at Columbus Air Force Base, Mississippi, because of racial tensions. Even though allowed to go in all military facilities, he

recalls that the black soldiers tended to segregate themselves on post and stick together, but it was a different story in combat where soldiers covered each other's backs regardless of race.¹³ Like Mason Lewis a generation earlier, several of post members made the military a career, rising to high ranks, such as Sergeant Major Tom Morton, who earned the Silver Star in combat and Master Sergeant Joe Walker.

Today, the post welcomes all veterans with members representing military service from World War II through the more recent conflicts of the Persian Gulf, Bosnia (IFOR and SFOR), Iraq, and Afghanistan.

For years, the post has been a mainstay in the African-American community of Staunton and Augusta County, providing many services and engaging in a range of volunteer activities. In its earliest years, the post has been described as more of a social club which sponsored parties and dances to raise money.¹⁴ The post also sponsored a basketball league and promoted youth programs such as sponsoring a Boy Scout Troop and recognizing youth achievement. The post became more active when it moved to the Montgomery Hall Park bowling alley, with social hours, dances, card parties and bingo.¹⁵ But in the early years, the post did not march in the local parades or participate in ceremonial functions, which

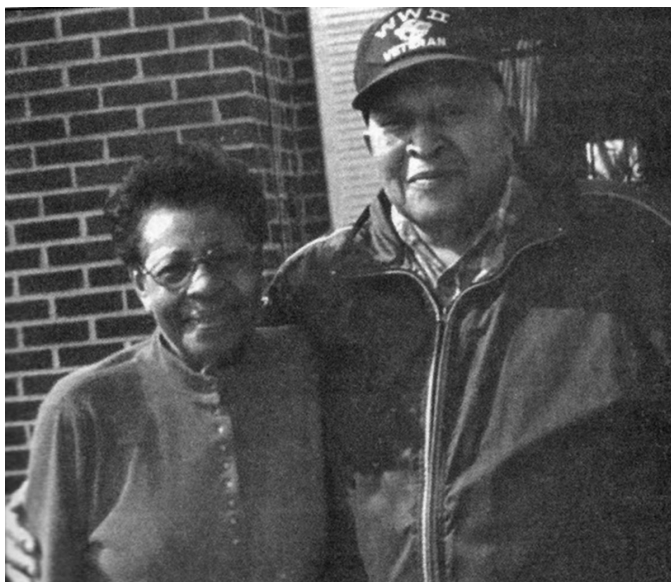


Vietnam vets from the post include: Frank Darcus, Melvin Crawford, Freddie Gray, Henry Funches, Robert Jackson, Haywood McCauley, Tom Morton, Albert Richardson, Chester Smith, Joe Walker, Charles Carter, and Oliver Coates.



Desert Shield/Storm veterans and Afghanistan and Iraq veterans include: Al Scott (top left), Fontella Brown-Bundy (top right), Melissa Patrick (lower left) and Seth Lovell (lower right on the right).

were for whites only.¹⁶ It is not clear when the post started to march in the parades with the other local posts, but during the time that Paige Kier was Post Commander, he told Herman Fitzgerald, commander of Post 2216 that the two posts needed to march together around the park because when they marched as separate units, 7814 was always put behind 2216, which created resentment.¹⁷ For years, the former senior NCO's of 7814, such as Mason Lewis and Joe Walker called cadence for the combined VFW formation. When the African-American Heritage Festival started in 1989,



Hattie and Herbert Casey fought to improve schools for their children.



Members of the post with local Boy Scouts.

the post and its auxiliary were right there with a food stand selling country ham, hamburgers, ice cream, and baked goods. Likewise, they operated a food stand during the Fourth of July activities. The post has not had its own post home except for the period between 1986 and 2012, when it owned a house on Churchville Avenue opposite the main entrance of Gypsy Hill Park.

Perhaps most significantly, several post members and their families such as the Caseys, Kiers, and Becks led the way in pushing for improved African-American schooling in the 1950s and ultimately integration of our schools in the early 1960s. Their experience in military service during World War II was instrumental in causing these families to reject the inferior



Members of the post basketball team.

quality of public education for their children and to push for something better. James Becks explained, he was fed up with poor treatment and just wouldn't take it anymore after the service. And his experience with the race riots that he participated in gave him the confidence to push back.¹⁸ Herbert Casey said that his military experience gave him an appreciation for the importance of education.¹⁹ As a result, the Caseys pressured the Augusta County School Board to improve the Round Hill School. Soon after, the Becks and Kiers enrolled their children in the white public schools in 1963, several years before the formal end of segregation.

This history should also mention the role of the VFW Auxiliary. In its early days, there was a Ladies Auxiliary, which was discontinued at some point. In 1991, the Ladies Auxiliary was rechartered with the assistance of Louise Fitzgerald and Peggy Harris of Post 2216. The Auxiliary was instrumental in decorating the newly acquired Post Home and assisting with the food sales. They also provided dinners after the post meetings, as well as providing food baskets to those in need during the holidays.

Today, the post continues as an active volunteer service organization and welcomes all veterans with members representing military service up to the present day. The post also continues to serve the broader Staunton-Augusta community through a range of activities and programs. Post members honor the dead and memorialize those who have served and made the ultimate sacrifice with Memorial Day dedications, POW/MIA Day observances, and Veterans Day parades and events.



The Thomas-Fields Ladies Auxiliary has long been an integral part of the post community.

We support and honor currently serving service members whether through Support the Troops scrolls of honor, care packages, or Welcome Home celebrations. Veterans Day is an opportunity to ensure that our veterans get the thanks that they are due from a grateful community.

We perform community service through color guard presentations, providing concessions for events such as the Senior Fishing Derby, supporting the African-American Heritage Festival, and African-American historical recognition such as the Montgomery Hall Park dedication. We also perform numerous hours of individual volunteer services such as



Post members prepare for the Veterans' Day parade. L-R: Albert Richardson, Tom Morton, Robert Jackson, Joe Walker, and Chester Smith.



Presenting the colors at a Staunton Braves baseball game. L-R: Joe Walker, Tom Morton, Albert Richardson, Al Scott, and Frank Darcus.

hospital and nursing home visitation, support to grieving families, and help to the needy through the Food Pantry.

And we support several youth programs such as the annual Fishing Derby and the AAU basketball tournament. Our members visit schools at all levels to talk to students about the meaning of service and patriotism.

We are one of only four posts out of twelve posts in a five-county district that sponsors all of the Citizenship Education awards. Despite being one of the smallest posts in the state, last year we sponsored

competition for seventy-one students, awarding a total of nine hundred dollars to our winners.

Today, we cannot turn the clock back and right the wrongs of the past. But we can and should learn from these examples of dignity, honor, loyalty, and selfless service that the veterans of the Thomas-Fields Post represent. They stand as inspirational examples of devoted patriots, who set such an inspirational example of pride in service and pride in country.

Endnotes

¹<http://www.navsource.org/archives/12/170575s.htm>.

²<https://news.google.com/newspapers?nid=2211&dat=19450113&id=Px0mAAAIBAJ&sjid=wP0FAAAAIBAJ&pg=4796,1665306&hl=en>.

³*Staunton News Leader*, June 5, 1948.

⁴Interview with C.R. Lee Ratliff, December 20, 2011.

⁵<http://www.nationalww2museum.org/assets/pdfs/african-americans-in-world.pdf>. "African Americans in World War II: Fighting for a Double Victory."

⁶<http://www.pacificwarmuseum.org/your-visit/african-americans-in-wwii/> "AFRICAN AMERICANS IN WWII"

⁷Melissa Patrick, "Mason Lewis Funeral Remarks," October 12, 2010.

⁸Interview with Herbert Casey, February 2, 2016.

⁹<http://www.blackpast.org/gah/black-soldiers-and-ledo-road-1942-1945> Black Soldiers and the Ledo Road (1942-1945).

¹⁰Interview with James Becks, February 2, 2016.

¹¹Interview with Landon Pendleton, August 29, 2011 and August 9, 2016.

¹²Headquarters 24th Infantry Division, General Orders Number 14, 8 January 1952, Bronze Star Medal Awards.

¹³Interview with Joseph Walker, April 13, 2016.

¹⁴Interview with James Becks, February, 24, 2016. Interview with Ophelia Kier and Emigene Tate, September 17, 2016.

¹⁵Interview with Ophelia Kier and Emigene Tate, September 17, 2016.

¹⁶Interview with James Becks, February, 24, 2016.

¹⁷Interview with Ophelia Kier and Emigene Tate, September 17, 2016.

¹⁸Interview with James Becks, February 24, 2016.

¹⁹Interview with Herbert Casey, February 26, 2016.



Robert Jackson enjoys the 4th of July parade from the post float.



Members of the post with SGT Brandon T. Wallace as he retires from the Army. first row L-R: Joe Walker Robert Jackson, Albert Richardson; second row, L-R: SGT Wallace, Frank Darcus, Herbert Casey, Melissa Patrick, and Chester Smith.

Pragmatic Capitalism: Businessman Michael G. Harman of Staunton, Virginia, 1823-1877 By Maria Lee, Ph.D. County College of Morris

Editor's Note: Dr. Maria Lee is an Associate Professor of History of County College of Morris in Randolph, N.J. Although herself a Pittsburgh native, she has ancestors from the Staunton-Augusta County area.

Antebellum Staunton and Augusta County residents generally held a reputation as being Whiggish Democrats. Historians have noted that regional white male voters tended to prefer a mix of the Whig's pro-capitalism investment into infrastructure and the pro-slavery laissez-faire Jacksonian Republicanism of the Democratic Party. Largely overlooked by historians, an important Staunton businessman, Michael Garber Harman seemed to personally exemplify this complex brew of ideologies. Harman was one of five socially and politically prominent brothers who served in the Confederate officer corps. Yet Michael G. Harman's lasting contributions to the region were in the realm of business. Although he was Staunton's leading slaveholder by 1860, his business tactics and goals more closely resembled those of northern capitalists. He practiced a pragmatic capitalism—an endless quest for profits using and developing assets readily available in the Shenandoah Valley. Yet his political loyalty was to the Democratic Party, and later the Reconstruction-era Conservative party. As a successful Staunton capitalist, Harman's career suggests that the origins of the "New South" lay in the antebellum period, and that the Shenandoah Valley was closer to northern business practices than those of the Deep South.¹

Early Capitalism Efforts

Born in Waynesboro in 1823 to Lewis Harman and Sarah Garber Harman, Michael grew up as part of a large extended family of Harmans and Garbers. By marriages, the Harmans were related to other prestigious families in Augusta County, such as the Baldwins, Michies, Johnsons, and Hodges. Thus Lewis and Sarah (Garber) Harman would eventually raise five sons, Michael, John, William, Asher, and Thomas (a daughter died as an infant) who were well-connected to the county elite. All of the Harman

offspring would prove successful in business and politics. As adults, the Harman brothers possessed a “certain obstinate energy that slashed through all obstacles to attain whatever they wished to accomplish.”² Doubtless they learned a great deal from their parents and extended family. Their father Lewis Harman was “a shrewd dealer in horses, and took many fine animals to the Richmond market.” Lewis and Sarah would move to Staunton by the 1830s and became proprietors of the popular Washington Tavern. Cousin Michael Garber was a “Sheriff of Augusta Co., Mayor of Staunton,” and “ran stage lines, and “also kept the ‘Bell’ Tavern.” Clearly the Harman-Garber clan saw plenty of business and political opportunities in the growing market city of Staunton.³

Michael Garber Harman showed a talent for capitalism early. As a young man he managed the Farish and Company stage coach line, eventually becoming an owner. He also served as manager for the American Hotel.⁴ After his father’s death in 1840, Harman heard of a scheme to build a first-class modern hotel in Staunton. Michael then convinced the investors to build on the site of the Washington Tavern, which had been damaged by a fire. Over time, young Michael and his uncle, Attorney William H. Garber, bought out the interests of the other investors, gaining full ownership of Staunton’s sole first class hotel, known as the Virginia Hotel.⁵

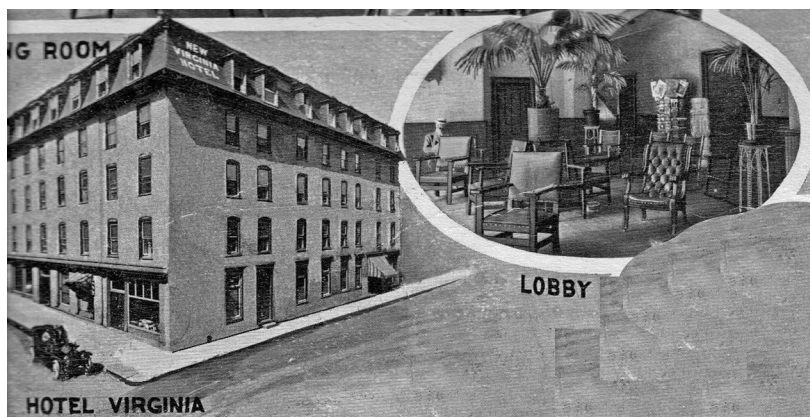
Success in the stage line and hotel led Michael Garber Harman to invest heavily in land and slaves. Indeed, he owned so much property that “it was said that he owned all the land on both sides of the Valley Pike for five miles out of Staunton.” By 1860 Harman was also Augusta County’s largest slaveholder as he owned over forty slaves.⁶ Although agriculture and the slave trade were traditional and potentially lucrative investments for southern businessmen, Harman used the profits from agriculture, real estate, and slavery to pursue a wide range of business interests. While business opportunities were Harman’s passion, he also participated in politics both at the state and local level. For instance, he was in attendance at a town council meeting in February 1857, along with other elites such as famed Staunton Attorney Alexander H. H. Stuart.⁷

Moving into finance, Michael Harman had become President of the Augusta Savings Bank in 1855. He also was the proprietor of a haberdashery where he announced that he was “prepared from an entirely new stock of HATS and CAPES” to “Furnish the citizens of Staunton a superior article at 10 percent less for cash than it can be obtained elsewhere in this market.” He urged customers to “Call before the stock has been diminished, at the

Store Room nearly opposite the Va. Hotel." Harman was also among the officers of the Boot and Shoe Leather Manufacturing Company. Clearly this was a young businessman on the rise.⁸

Having married Caroline Stephenson in 1845, the young couple prospered and reproduced prodigiously with Caroline bearing fourteen children. Of those children, there were two sets of twins. But like other families of the era, the specter of death was always near as seven of the Harman children died in infancy. While business was his passion, Harman also took an interest in his extended family. Junior members such as A.M. Garber worked for him in various capacities. Known to his friends as "Mike," Harman was a popular figure in Staunton and knew the importance of keeping an active public image for the benefit of his business career. His plans and activities were often in the local and state newspapers such as when Harman purchased William Tate's farm on Lewis Creek for \$18,000 and H.W. Sheffey's farm for \$31,450.⁹

By 1860, the self-made Harman stood among Staunton's elite and was among its wealthiest citizens. His family lived in a "beautiful home on top of one of the hills, with large grounds where his family entertained lavishly." He had sold his interests in the National and Virginia hotels by 1859, yet the tax records for 1860 list Harman as owning twenty properties in Staunton alone, and over forty slaves. As a slave master, Harman seems to have been among the more humane. In 1867, one of his former slaves, African-American community leader Philip Roselle, recalled that he had "belonged to a set of people, who, if anybody troubled him, were very apt to whip them for it..." While Harman may have been a humane



A postcard view of the Virginia Hotel.

owner, like many of his neighbors, he was firmly pro-slavery. Moreover it was in his business interests to protect his slaves as they represented considerable capital investment.¹⁰

The John Brown Raid on Harpers Ferry in 1859 shocked the southern slave states. Over the next year, Augusta County pursued a bifurcated policy of military preparedness in case of slave insurrection, and a firm commitment to the maintenance of the Union. At a public meeting in November 1859, Staunton pledged support to the Governor's efforts to "protect the state." A series of resolutions were passed including one to "solicit contributions for the full equipment of our military companies, such as will insure their preparation and readiness for every emergency. On motion of M.G. Harman."¹¹

As the nation increasingly became divided over the slavery issue, and the 1860 presidential election unfolded, the Harman brothers were firm supporters of Illinois Democratic candidate, Senator Stephen A. Douglas. They believed that the moderate pro-slavery Douglas was the only politician with enough national appeal capable of maintaining the union. As a large slaveholder, Harman had much capital invested in the Peculiar Institution, and was a general supporter of the standard pro-slavery arguments. But as a businessman and citizen, and like much of Augusta County, Harman was also a staunch Union man. He participated in the State Democratic convention of 1860, and in the local political scene, arguing for the preservation of the Union.¹²

No single event underscored Michael Harman's status as an elite of Staunton and his unionist democratic beliefs more than the arrival of Illinois Senator and Democratic presidential candidate Stephen A. Douglas in town in September 1860. Harman's popular younger brother William, then State Attorney (similar to a modern District Attorney) and general in the militia greeted Douglas with a rousing speech "To you, sir, all eyes are turned! In this crisis, involving our dearest interests, we have the right to expect, and do expect, of you, the same loyal devotion and self-sacrificing love of our common country which has characterized and distinguished you during your past service in the councils of the nation."

After concluding events in Staunton.

Mr. Douglas was then escorted to the residence of M. G. Harman, Esq., whose guest he was during his stay in the city.--A number of friends dined with him, and at night between three and four hundred of our citizens called to see him. He was serenaded by Turner's Cornet Band, in response to which he made a brief speech, thanking the members of the band, and renewing to the crowd his obligations for the many acts of kindness shown him while in Staunton.¹³

After Douglas' departure and Lincoln's election, the secession process began.

Civil War Era

After Virginia seceded from the union, Col. Michael G. Harman, as Quartermaster of Staunton, issued a series of "Flaming Proclamations" calling men to arms for the Confederate cause. These broadside appeals to the patriotism of Augusta County men and Harman's conduct attracted criticism from Alexander H. H. Stuart, a Staunton lawyer and traditional elite who had served as Secretary of the Interior under Millard Fillmore. Stuart wrote to the Confederate Secretary of War that Harman "who is a civilian unacquainted with military law or usages, and who has rendered himself exceedingly obnoxious to officers and soldiers" should be replaced by a "military officers of intelligence and character."¹⁴ Stuart's criticisms may have been a bit unfair. As Lincoln famously remarked about the preparedness of Civil War troops "You are green it is true, they are green also. You are all green alike." Over the years, Stuart would show repeated opposition to Harman, although the men remained civil in public.

Like his brother John (Stonewall Jackson's Quartermaster), Michael served primarily as a Quartermaster (at Staunton). But he also saw combat as a colonel of the 52nd Virginia regiment. In 1862 at the Battle of McDowell, Harman was grievously injured with "his right arm being shattered by a Minnie ball tearing through it from the wrist to beyond the elbow." The injury was dire enough that the surgeons insisted upon amputation of the injured arm, but Harman refused to allow the operation. Although doctors eventually saved him arm and his life, the injury "caused him great suffering for years" even up to his death.¹⁵ He returned to his regiment to fight at the Battle of Fredericksburg, but due to ongoing issues with his injured arm, returned as "Commandant of the post at Staunton, being most highly commended for his efficiency as an officer of merit, by both Gen. Stonewall Jackson and Gen. Robt. E. Lee."¹⁶

Military duties took up a good deal of Harman's time, yet he did not neglect business. In 1862 he bought the Merillat House at 521 East Beverley Street in Staunton. The Gothic Revival home was architecturally striking, but small. Harman then "flipped" the house adding major additions that were sympathetic to the original, but by then somewhat outdated style. He then sold Merillat House to Aaron and Catherine Lara in 1862 making, one imagines, a healthy profit.¹⁷

In 1863 there was more trouble between Harman and Alexander H. H.

Stuart when the latter sent a confidential letter to Staunton's Confederate Congressman, John Brown Baldwin. Stuart advised Baldwin of "rumors of mismanagement of the Staunton Quartermaster Department commanded by Colonel Michael G. Harman." Baldwin then shared the letter with the Quartermaster General's Richmond office "emphasizing Stuart's name not be used." Harman, however, vigorously protested being implicated by rumor and Stuart was eventually unmasked as the source of the charge. A Court of Inquiry acquitted Harman in the matter. Stuart would remain an enemy, and suspicious of Harman's motives and methods, although the men apparently had no public confrontation. Stuart, perhaps was jealous of the younger man's success, social popularity, fortune, and his unconventional, self-promotional methods.¹⁸

As Quartermaster in Staunton, Colonel Harman firmly understood that the Confederacy was dying by means of starvation, lack of man power, industry, and will. By 1865, Harman had lost about half of his slaves. As a large slaveholder in Augusta County, it seems likely that many of Harman's slaves were rented out. Union raids helped some slaves to escape, while others took advantage of the crumbling infrastructure of slave control and fled to the Union army. Surveying the Confederacy's dismal prospects for the future, Harman proposed to Confederate President Jefferson Davis that African-American troops be employed. He argued that "unless the able bodied slaves are used by our Government they will be by the Enemy. I have already lost nearly half."¹⁹ Although Robert E. Lee also felt that black Confederate troops should be used, it was too late for such pragmatic measures. Even more importantly, enslaved African Americans understood the Union's promise of freedom and would have made dubious Confederate troops.

After Lee's surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia, Confederate Colonel Charles Triplett O'Ferrall, planned to join up with Johnston's army in the west to continue Confederate resistance. O'Ferrall encountered Harman in Staunton. "Mike" gave him forty dollars in gold out of his pocket, but O'Ferrall noted that "while he did not discourage me, I realized before long that he thought we were doing a senseless thing."²⁰ More serious in the chaos of the Confederate collapse was the threat of marauders. When a gang drove off Harman's sheep, he assembled a posse and "retook a lot of his sheep and drove off the plunderers."²¹

The Harman-Garber clan had paid a heavy toll during the war. Two brothers had died with William being killed at the Battle of Waynesboro

in 1865, and Thomas perishing of disease in camp. Their cousin Tom Garber also was killed. Michael Harman and brother Asher had each been wounded in battle. Brother John came home from war “a broken man in health.” Michael and Carolyn Harman’s eldest son Lewis began the war as a cadet at Virginia Military Institute, fought bravely for the Confederacy, was wounded twice, and ended the war as a POW.²² Despite his ongoing troubles with his injured arm, it is clear that Michael Garber Harman looked forward to the post-war period, seeing business opportunities in rebuilding the war shattered South.

Post-Civil War Endeavors

Even before the Civil War had ended, Harman had become the main proponent of a Valley railroad. His experience in running stage coach lines especially made him interested in railroads. As early as 1853 an article in the *Richmond Enquirer*, (and the *Staunton Spectator*), noted that Harman’s name was in consideration for the presidency of the Virginia Central Railroad. The article claimed that Harman was not interested in the position, but this may have been a political maneuver. Although Harman did not gain the presidency of the Virginia Central in the 1850s, his interest in railroads continued. During the Civil War as Quartermaster at Staunton, he no doubt perceived the necessity of increased rail connection throughout the Shenandoah Valley.

In April 1866, a railroad “organizing convention was held in Staunton with Harrisonburg, Staunton, Lexington, and the counties of Rockingham, Augusta, Rockbridge, Botetourt and Roanoke represented.” Harman was the driving force behind the railroad project and served as chair of the convention. Due to his enthusiasm for the project, he was elected the first president of the proposed railroad. The plan was to have the new railroad cut straight through the Shenandoah Valley making a single direct line from Harrisonburg to below Lexington. (Roughly following modern I-81) The new line would also link-up with other lines to provide direct access to Baltimore. The proposed Valley railroad attracted considerable attention and received promised investment from the B&O Railroad. In theory this all sounded quite good. But in the capital-strapped Reconstruction, funding proved hard to secure.²³

As first president of the proposed Valley Railroad, Harman began a process of attending endless meetings in the communities along the railroad to secure funding. Each community was to provide a subscription. But fears of ‘boodle’ or graft meant that each community created many

pre-conditions to be met before funds would be released.²⁴ In order to gain a greater sense of solidity, Col. Harman and other officers of the railroad asked Robert E. Lee, then serving as President of Washington College, to become Valley Railroad President. This rationale was sound, but Lee died prematurely in 1870. At this point, Harman turned to John W. Garrett, son of the B&O president, who would serve as Valley Railroad president for the next decade. Harman, however, remained the railroad's driving force.²⁵ For instance, the 22 May 1871 *Daily Dispatch* reported that "Col. Mike Harman" has just "visited Baltimore to get a little assistance to make up the deficit of \$200,000 which Augusta county refused to subscribe."

While such maneuvers kept the project alive, the railroad continued to be a headache for Col. Harman, who continually lobbied for funding and completion of the line. In the meantime, he did not neglect his other business interests. The April 23, 1869, *Staunton Vindicator* noted that "Harman and Company have put in a new daily stage line between Staunton and Harrisonburg, and offer connections to the Chesapeake and Ohio and Orange, Alexandria, and Manassas Railroads." Harman was still a major player in the stage business, which was the only means of public transportation up and down the Valley Pike. Not surprisingly, drawing upon his background in hotels and stagecoach, he hoped to move into the lucrative tourist business.

In 1868, Harman's oldest son Lewis and daughter-in-law Ellen had purchased the famous geological landmark known as Natural Bridge. They then sold this on to Michael and Caroline Harman in 1870, who then sold the same property the next day to railroad magnate John W. Garrett. With so much of his time devoted to the railroad, Harman and Garrett never completed their development plans for the Natural Bridge property—no doubt hampered by the slowness of the Valley Railroad construction. In 1872 Harman got the property back and sold it to his brother Asher in 1876. The Natural Bridge tract finally passed out of the Harman family in 1881.²⁶

Harman's local real estate investment, speculation, and development also continued. In 1865, Col. Harman had hired his friend Jed Hotchkiss, the cartographer for Stonewall Jackson during the war, to survey his vast property in Fauquier County, the "Manor of Leeds." Harman and Hotchkiss also devised a scheme to develop a vineyard on Institution Road, modern East Beverley Street. The vineyard never materialized, however, with Hotchkiss purchasing Harman's share of the lot, and eventually making his home there – the Staunton landmark known as the "The Oaks." Harman

also owned a traditional grist mill. While this would have been used to grind grains grown on his farms, neighbors would also pay to have their crops processed.²⁷

As owner of many properties, at one level, Col. Harman was a simple residential landlord renting to individuals such as John M. Stanley, a local man who may have been an employee of the stage coach business. Stanley rented a house from Harman. Stanley was using the house as a home for his “Cyprian Octoroon” mistress, Jinnie Sorrels. After Stanley shot and killed a member of a mob attempting to harass or rape Sorrels, Harman was forced to testify in court that “the premises were rented by Stanley, and the rent paid by bonds, with the exception of a few dollars.”²⁸ This incident suggests what must have been a fairly typical arrangement between Col. Harman and his business contacts in the cash-strapped Reconstruction era-extensive use of bonds for currency. Indeed, after his premature death in 1877, several legal cases continued into the early 1900s trying to sort out liabilities on Col. Harman’s bonds.

Since capital was scarce, the ever-pragmatic Harman often sold homes and farms while holding the mortgage himself. Doubtless this earned him some enemies as he occasionally had to foreclose. In 1872 he pressed suit against W.A. Abney and then bought up Abney’s property at a foreclosure sale. At a bankruptcy sale of the Virginia Hotel, Harman (a former owner) bought one lot of the hotel’s property and he partnered with Jed Hotchkiss to buy another for \$1,525. Most often, however, Harman developed property with sale in mind. Together with his frequent real estate partner Robert G. Bickle, Harman developed four new stylish Italianate houses in the newly-expanded Gospel Hill section of Staunton prior to 1857. The 19 January 1872 *Daily State Journal* announced that Harmon had sold a “handsome property to Major McMahon” in the town of Staunton. A story in the 11 February 1873 *Spectator* about improvements and new construction in Staunton noted that “Col. M.G. Harman (is building) a fine residence, fronting John Scherer’s on Frederick, and houses in other places.”²⁹

Besides personal rentals, Harman also pursued other capitalistic business ventures. Harman was among the Staunton elite who formed the Second National Bank in 1865. In the same year, Harman became one of the founding directors of the National Express Transportation business. This Richmond-based company aimed to provide shipping and transportation to a national customer base, while providing employment for ex-Confederate soldiers. The company prospered in the short term, but ultimately

failed. Harman also was involved with the founding of a Joint Livestock Company founded in Staunton in 1871. An advertisement in the *Spectator* announced that the market was “where you can buy or sell fat or stock cattle, horses, mules, sheep &c., to great advantage.”

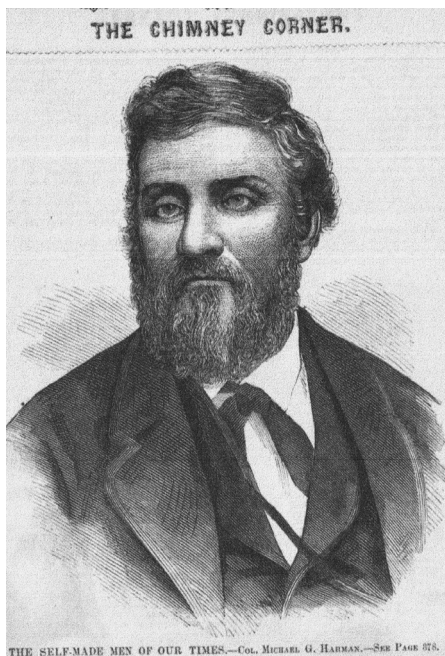
In addition to banking, real estate, and livestock, Colonel Harman held the contract for carrying the mail from “Richmond to Buchanan” and eventually bought out the James River and Kanawha canal boat line. Harman also served as a director of a Richmond company that produced axle oil. Likewise, he was a director of the Cotopaxi Iron company, located on the Augusta-Rockbridge line and founded in 1873. However, the furnace does not seem to have been in blast during Harman’s tenure. Meantime, the popular periodical *Frank Leslie’s Chimney Corner* ran an article and portrait on Harman in April 1872. *The Chimney Corner* biographies highlighted self-made business men to a national market. All told, Harman was a very busy man who was always thinking ahead of ways to create more wealth out of the Shenandoah Valley’s abundant assets.³⁰

Meantime, the Valley Railroad project continued to be quite a headache. In 1873, Harman’s old nemesis, Alexander H.H. Stuart, proposed to withdraw Staunton’s subscription to the beleaguered railroad at a town council meeting in Staunton. In another meeting “quite a discussion arose over Valley Railroad subscription during which Mr. Stuart stated that he was satisfied Baltimore had no idea of carrying out her subscription.” Col. Harman stated other areas would be in Baltimore with their subscriptions, but to his great chagrin, Council passed an amendment that would withdraw Augusta County funding in thirty days if the terms of the subscription were not met.³¹

In politics, Harman aligned with the post-war Conservative Party and against the Republicans. He was called to the chair of a State Conservative Convention in August 1873 where he argued “that the white men of Virginia could not afford to lose in the contest now about to be inaugurated,” and to win their proceedings must be “harmonious.” Harman also took part in local meetings and a “Conservative Jubilee” celebrating a Conservative victory in the state. His political views made it possible for him to deal effectively with other Virginia Conservative Party members in order to advance his business interests. On the other hand, Harman still preferred the Whiggish policy of infrastructure spending. He saw that a loosening of the state and local purse strings would benefit all as the Valley Railroad promised increased trade and travel to the region. Ultimately, the rail-



Harman's engraved canehead (top).
An image of Harman, right, from
Frank Leslie's *Chimney Corner*, 6
May 1871. (Courtesy L. Tom Perry
Special Collections 1130 Harold B.
Lee Library Brigham Young Univer-
sity Provo, UT 84602.)



road was never entirely completed and failed to live up to its potential. That it did not succeed had little to do with Harman's tireless efforts to complete the railroad. Rather, the Valley Railroad's failure owes more to the difficult challenges of raising vast sums of capital in a war-torn and cash-strapped Virginia³²

Conclusion

Col. Harman died suddenly and prematurely of an apparent heart attack in December 1877. The newspapers noted that there was some irony to the fact that he passed away on a train. Not surprisingly, he was headed to Richmond in concert with his old friend Jed Hotchkiss to secure funding for his recently flood damaged canal. The *Staunton Spectator* noted that he "was a man of the greatest energy and of a peculiar personal magnetism, which never failed to have its effect upon all with whom he came in contact." Harman's life and career suggests that the Shenandoah Valley was hardly a static society during the antebellum and Reconstruction eras. Indeed Harman's capitalistic ventures more closely mirror those of his northern contemporaries than the Deep South's entrenchment in cotton production. Harman's pragmatic capitalism took advantage of locally available enslaved and free labor, raw materials, regional development, and housing and market demands to create wealth. Without the techno-

logical advances then fermenting in the North, Southern businessmen had to develop tactics to make profits out of existing assets. For the successful and pragmatic few like Harman, their careers foreshadowed the pro-industrialization New South doctrine of the 1880s.

Endnotes

¹The New South ideology promoted Post-Civil War Southern Industrialization. The classic study is C. Vann Woodward, *Origins the New South, 1877-1913*, (Louisiana: Louisiana State University Press, 1951). A more recent take is Edward Ayers, *The Promise of the New South: Life After Reconstruction*, (New York: Oxford University Press, 1992).

²Lewis Harman mentioned in *Staunton Spectator* 17 June 1873. Unfortunately Michael G. Harman's personal business records have not survived. Fortunately in 2010, Carolyn Harman Scott and Linda Bergquist Hanson republished an earlier text, *Virginia Armistead Garber, Harman-Garber Record*, (Charlottesville, Va.: Privately printed, 1926), 79. I want to thank both for the insights they shared about the Harman-Garber families. Much of the research for this essay was completed on a Sabbatical Semester and research grant from County College of Morris, New Jersey.

³*Harman-Garber Record*, 75.

⁴Charles Culbertson, "Harman was Staunton's 'indomitable' quartermaster," *The Staunton Daily News Leader*, 20 May 2010.

⁵*Staunton Spectator*, 3 June 1885, (Library of Virginia: Virginia Chronicle, <http://viriniachronicle.com/>), hereafter cited as "VC." This article recounts the history of the Virginia Hotel and other Staunton establishments rebutting an earlier story.

⁶*Harman-Garber Record*, 79.

⁷*Staunton Spectator*, 18 February 1857. *Valley of the Shadow: Two Communities in the American Civil War*, (Charlottesville: University of Virginia, <http://valley.lib.virginia.edu/VoS/choosepart.html>). Hereafter cited as VOTS. In the interest of brevity, I have omitted exact addresses on newspaper articles as they are easily found via a simple search on VOTS.

⁸Hats and Capes advertised in *Staunton Spectator* 10 January 1860, VOTS. ASB *The Daily Dispatch*, 23 January 1855, VC. Shoe company is mentioned in *Staunton Spectator* 10 April 1860, VOTS.

⁹*Alexandria Gazette*, 23 February 1860, VC. At various times Harman employed family members as secretary, *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, p. 395 posted at www.en.m.wikisource.com, (accessioned 24 May 2017). A.M. Garber would found the *Valley Virginian* newspaper after the Civil War. Garber also worked for Harman after the war, *Harman-Garber Record*, 27. During Garber's tenure at the *Valley Virginian*, the tone was much more civil toward the freed people than that of *The Spectator* or *Vindicator*.

¹⁰VOTS, http://valley.lib.virginia.edu/tax_search_results.html?q=db:tax_staunton_60%20AND%20last:harman&rows=50&start=0&sort=last%20asc,%20first%20asc (accessed 10 April 2016). On hotel sales, see *Staunton Vindicator*, 7 October 1859. VOTS. Harman's mansion is mentioned in *Harman-Garber Record*, p.79. Carolyn Harman-Scott reports the house burned sometime in the late nineteenth or early century. Phillip Roselle (this writer's gg grandfather or gg grand uncle) is quoted in remarks after a great meeting of the freed people and white community leaders. *Staunton Vindicator*, 3 May 1867, VOTS.

¹¹*Staunton Vindicator* 2 December 1859, VOTS.

¹²*Staunton Vindicator* 24 July 1860. VOTS.

¹³Ayers, *In the Presence of Mine Enemies* has a fine summary of Douglas' visit to Staunton, 69-70. *Staunton Spectator* 7 September 1860, VOTS. *Staunton Vindicator* 7 September 1860, VOTS.

¹⁴Ayers, *In the Presence of Mine Enemies*, 184.

¹⁵"War Sketch of a Well Known Virginia Family" in *Harman-Garber Record*. 100-101, and also a handwritten version, author unknown, in Harman Family Papers, 1895-2007, Albert and Shirley Small Special Collections Library, Charlottesville, University of Virginia (accession #11700-a, Special Collections),

¹⁶*Ibid.*

¹⁷Joe Nutt, Marney Gibbs and others, *Historical Houses of Staunton, Virginia* (Verona, Virginia: Mid Valley Press, 2008), 54. United States Department of the Interior, National Register of Historical Places Inventory-Nomination Form, "Merillat House." http://www.dhr.virginia.gov/registers/Cities/Staunton/132-0028_Merrillat,J.C.M.,House_1982_Final_Nomination.pdf. (accessed 29 June 2016).

¹⁸John R. Hildebrand, *The Life and Times of John Brown Baldwin, 1820-1873, A Chronicle of Virginia's Struggle with Slavery, Secession, Civil War, and Reconstruction*, (Staunton, Va: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2008), 148-149.

¹⁹Jaime Amanda Martinez, *Confederate Slave Impressment in the Upper South*, (Chapel Hill, N.C.: University of North Carolina Press, 2013), 92-93 & 306. William Blair, *Virginia's Private War: Feeding Body and Soul in the Confederacy, 1861-65*, (New York: Oxford University Press), 124.

²⁰Charles Triplett O'Ferrall, *Forty Years of Active Service*, (New York and Washington: The Neal Publishing Company, 1904). Google Ebooks: https://books.google.com/books?id=RRWC6v-ZLGyUC&printsec=frontcover&source=gbs_ge_summary_r&cad=0#v=onepage&q&f=false (accessed 28 July 2016).

²¹Richard K MacMaster, *Augusta County History, 1865-1950*, (Staunton, Va.: Augusta County Historical Society, 1987), 27.

²²A.M. Garber, Jr., *Stonewall Jackson's War: A Sketch of the Life and Services of Major John A. Harman*, Chapter, (Staunton: 1876) Kindle Edition, 2014. Garber's book was an attempt to rehabilitate John Harman in the eyes of Staunton's Conservative elite. John, Michael's brother and Stonewall Jackson's quartermaster had joined the Republican Party in 1869, and worked with some of the freedmen on terms of equality to establish Augusta County's Republican Party. Thus Garber's book was an attempt to redeem John after his premature death in 1873 by reminding local whites of his stalwart service to Jackson and the Confederacy. On Lewis Harman's military career, *Harman-Garber Record*, 102-103.

²³John R. Hildebrand, *Iron Horses in the Valley: The Valley and Shenandoah Valley Railroads, 1866-1882*, (Shippensburg, Pa.: Burd Street Press, 2001), 47.

²⁴Regarding the difficulties of securing funding, see Hildebrand's very thorough *Iron Horses in the Valley*. Harman would have profited from the railroad not only as an officer. He and his brother Asher became construction sub-contractors on the railroad.

²⁵Hildebrand, *Iron Horses*, 50-60. Passim.

²⁶United States Department of the Interior National Park Service, National Register of Historic Places Registration Form.1997. p. 7. www.dhr.virginia.gov (accessed 10 May 2016).

²⁷Peter W. Roper, *Jedediah Hotchkiss: Rebel Mapmaker and Virginia Businessman*, (Shippensburg, Pa.: White Mane, 1992), 86-94. It is ironic that Harman was far wealthier and better known than Hotchkiss in the 1870s, but after his premature death in 1877, Harman has escaped the biographer's pen. The *State Daily Journal* noted that Harman owned a mill about three miles from Staunton. 19 January 1872, VC.

²⁸*Valley Virginian*, 26 August 1869, VOTS.

²⁹Jonathan & Samuelle, "Subdivisions before the Twentieth Century" <https://cheyennekodyart.wordpress.com/2010/06/09/subdivisions-before-the-twentieth-century/> (June 9: 2010): Accessed 27 December 2016. *Staunton Spectator* 19 January 1872 and 16 April 1872 carry notice of the Abney foreclosure and sale. Virginia hotel sale in *Staunton Spectator* 27 August 1872, VC. McMahon sale advertised in *The Daily State Journal*, 19 January 1872, VC. Some of Bickle's solo transactions are documented in Katharine L. Brown and Mary Baldwin College students' work in historic preservation, *Staunton's Newtown: Portrait of a Historic District*, (Staunton, Va.: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2005), 47, 94, 129, 136.

³⁰Spencer C. Tucker, *Brigadier General John D. Imboden: Confederate Commander in the Shenandoah*, (Lexington: University of Kentucky Press), 291-292. Joint Livestock Company in *Staunton Spectator* 26 December 1871 and 2 July 1872, VC. Cotopaxi iron company in *Staunton Spectator* 25 November 1873, VC. Regarding Augusta County iron production see, Chris Furr, "Augusta County Iron-making," *Augusta Historical Bulletin*: 45 (2009):61-73. Mail and Canal lines in *Staunton Spectator* 18 December 1877. Staunton National Bank in *Staunton Vindicator*, 6 October 1865 and *Valley Virginian* 6 December 1865, (VOTS). Frank Leslie's *Chimney Corner* biography of Harman is mentioned in the 2 May 1872 issue of the *Staunton Spectator*, VC. Thanks to Linda Hansen, a descendant of Harman, for tracking down what is, to date, the only surviving image of him.

³¹*Staunton Spectator*, 6 May 1873, VC.

³²State convention reported in the *Daily State Journal* 6 August 1873, VC.

Andrew Jackson, Henry Clay, and the 1832 Election in Staunton and Augusta County

By Daniel A. Métraux
Bulletin Associate Editor

Today many Americans have a passionate interest in politics and presidential elections consume our attention at least one or two years before Election Day. American elections at all levels can often become rowdy affairs, but if one looks back in American history, nineteenth-century elections were perhaps even more boisterous and full of passion than they are today. A good example is the 1832 presidential election in Staunton and Augusta County, Virginia, when incumbent President Andrew Jackson, running as a Democrat, faced stiff opposition from Henry Clay, former Speaker of the House, Secretary of State and popular senator from Kentucky. Clay ran as a “National Republican,” a nascent party that in later years became the Whigs.

Jackson won the hearts of many Americans, especially in the South and West, in 1815 when his ragtag military force inflicted a terrible defeat on British forces at the Battle of New Orleans. During the War of 1812 the British had defeated American forces in many battles and had burned the Capitol and White House. The Battle of New Orleans did much to restore American pride and Jackson was duly proclaimed a hero. His popularity led to a groundswell of support in 1824 for his presidential candidacy. He won a plurality of the popular and electoral vote, but John Quincy Adams became president when the election was decided in the House of Representatives.

There were many other Americans, especially in New England, who resented Jackson. Thomas Jefferson, two years before his death in 1826, offered this opinion of the hero of New Orleans:

I feel much alarmed at the prospect of seeing General Jackson President. He is one of the most unfit men I know of for such a place. He has had very little respect for laws and constitutions, and is, in fact, an able military chief. His passions are terrible. When I was President of the Senate, he was Senator; and he could never speak on account of the rashness of his feelings. I have seen him attempt it repeatedly, and as often choke with rage. His passions are, no doubt, cooler now; he has been much tried since I knew him, but he is a dangerous man.¹

Jackson won a landslide race against John Quincy Adams in 1828. Adams won New England, but Jackson swept the South and West and won in an electoral vote landslide. He also won fifty-six percent of the popular vote.

One of the most contentious issues of Jackson’s first term was the rechartering of the Bank of the United States. Jackson and many of his supporters opposed the bank, regarding it as a privileged institution and an enemy of the common people; meanwhile, Senators Henry Clay and Daniel Webster led the argument in Congress for its recharter. In July 1832, Jackson vetoed the recharter, charging that the bank constituted the “prostration of our Government to the advancement of the few at the expense of the many.”² Clay, Jackson’s 1832 opponent, supported a plan he and his followers called the “American System” that included tariffs to promote and protect American industry, a national bank to foster commerce, and government subsidies for expanding the nation’s infrastructure of roads, canals, bridges and the like.³ Jackson was a strong opponent of Clay’s program.

The results of the 1832 election confirmed Jackson’s popularity across most of the nation:

	Jackson	Clay
Electoral Votes	219	49
Popular Vote	701,780 (54.2%)	484,205 (37.4%)

Clay won Kentucky and a few New England states, but little else. Jackson fared even better in Virginia:

	Jackson	Clay
Virginia popular vote:	34,243 (74.96%)	11,436 (25.03%)

According to Joseph A. Waddell’s *Annals of Augusta County* (1888),⁴ Staunton and Augusta County were among the few areas that strongly supported Clay over Jackson. This area remained a Whig Party stronghold throughout the middle years of the nineteenth century. The *Staunton Spectator* in 1828 ran an article describing the strong regional sentiment against Jackson, reminding voters that such Virginia luminaries such as James Madison, James Monroe, Justice Marshall and many high-ranking judges statewide were against the general. Locally, thirty-one of thirty-six justices of the peace in Augusta County were opposed to Jackson

Despite Jackson’s increased popularity both nationally and state-

wide during his first term, Augusta County and Staunton remained an anti-Jackson stronghold. Clay received support from a large number of locally influential men including Judge Stuart (the father of Alexander H. H. Stuart), General Baldwin, the Waddells, Cochrans and many more. Waddell writes:

A political convention met in Staunton July 15, 1832, which was regarded as very imposing and influential. It was largely attended, by young men especially, from every part of the State. Charles James Faulkner, of Berkeley County, presided. The members called themselves "National Republicans." Resolutions offered by Lyttelton Waddell, of Augusta, recommending Mr. Clay for the presidency were adopted.⁵

Today people driving from New England and the Mid-Atlantic states to Tennessee, Kentucky and the Deep South come down Route 81 through Staunton and Augusta County. The same travel pattern existed throughout the late eighteenth and in the nineteenth century. Therefore, when Clay was traveling to and from his home in Lexington, Kentucky, and Jackson was going to and from the Hermitage, his home just east of Nashville, they would travel through or near Staunton and Augusta County. Waddell reports that Jackson would go out of his way to avoid Staunton because of his unpopularity in that city. He passed through the region on July 27, 1832, and as usual avoided Staunton. He lodged instead in Waynesboro and always made a point of attending church on a Sunday in Lexington with his friend, James McDowell, later the governor of Virginia.⁶

Senator Clay, on the other hand, always came through Staunton where he would get a warm welcome. When Clay passed through in 1832 two days after Jackson, he made a point of stopping and received many callers. He had visited four years earlier as well, and the *Spectator* related a charming story about the man as he passed through the county. Clay was walking by a schoolhouse where a lot of boys were out playing and he asked one of them if he could have a cup of water. After Clay had drunk his fill, the boy emboldened by his friendly manner asked Clay his name. "Mr. Clay," he exclaimed, "from Washington City?" As soon as Clay responded, the air reverberated with the cry of Huzza for Clay and Adams—"We are all for Clay and Adams here-Huzza for Clay and Adams."⁷

We do not have the actual voting figures for 1832, but Waddell makes it very clear that most prominent citizens in Staunton-Augusta were in favor of Clay. Historian Edward Ayers, when discussing party affiliations of the nineteenth-century, notes that most people did not join political parties out of individual ideology, but rather they often followed their neighbors

and locally prominent citizens, “because they could then stand to receive political prestige and influence. It simply did not make sense then to betray the sense of loyalty that grew between party followers.”⁸ Therefore, when Waddell states that most prominent citizens in Staunton-Augusta supported Clay, it makes sense that most voters supported Clay as well.

Augusta County maintained its allegiance as a stronghold through the late 1850s for Whigs. The votes in elections from 1844 to 1860 show a strong trend away from the Democratic Party:

1844:	Clay	1,398	Polk	665
1848	Taylor	1,341	Cass	720
1852	Scott	1,674	Pierce	1,388
1856	Fillmore	1,904	Buchanan	1,499
1860:	Bell	2,553	Douglas	1,094
			Breckinridge	218

Source: Waddell, 279

Today, the situation is very different. Augusta County is staunchly Republican, going for Donald Trump with eighty percent of the vote. In recent elections Democrats have held a very slight edge in Staunton with Secretary Hillary Clinton winning the city by about two hundred votes. Today voters are much more attracted by the ideology of parties than they were in the nineteenth century and are much less influenced by the opinions of prominent citizens.

Endnotes

¹ <http://thomasjeffersonleadership.com/blog/thomas-jefferson-on-andrew-jackson/> (accessed 6 May 2017)

² Robert Remini, *Daniel Webster: The Man and His Time* (New York: W W Norton, 1997), 371-372.

³ *Ibid.*, 220-21.

⁴ Jos. A. Waddell, *Annals of Augusta County, Virginia*. First published in 1888 and reproduced in the British Library Historical Print Collections, 245-246.

⁵ *Ibid.*, 246.

⁶ *Ibid.*, 246.

⁷ <https://historyengine.richmond.edu/episodes/view/3517> (accessed 6 May 2017)

⁸ *Ibid.*

Brethren during the Civil War: Christian Kline (1809-1880), his sons, the Confederate draft of 1862, and their filings with the Southern Claims Commission in 1871

By Wayne Diehl
(Revised July 29, 2013)

Retired school teacher Wayne Diehl has researched his family's Brethren history in Augusta and Rockingham Counties. He notes: "My family is related to Christian Kline, through his son, Frederick Cline (1839-1915), whose daughter, Ida Cline (1869-1926) married Isaac Franklin Diehl (1870-1945). Earl Diehl, Sr. (1893-1958) was their son." Here is the Civil War story of his Brethren ancestors.

During the Civil War, the Commonwealth of Virginia initiated a draft of men, aged eighteen to forty-five, in July of 1861. In addition, the Confederate States of America began a conscription of able bodied men, ages sixteen to thirty-five, in April of 1862. In response to these laws, a number of young men of the Brethren and Mennonite faith, which were both pacifist, tried to make their way west and north through the lines to escape service in the Southern army.

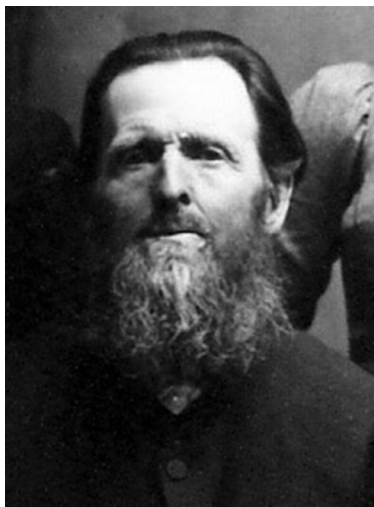
Accounts survive of two different groups who unsuccessfully made this attempt in March of 1862. Our family's gr. gr. gr. grandfather, Christian Kline of Augusta County, Virginia, had two sons in each of these groups that were captured in present-day West Virginia. Christian was instrumental in securing the release of both groups after they were imprisoned in Harrisonburg and Richmond, respectively.

In addition, Christian Kline's brother, Samuel Cline,¹ made a trip to Richmond to lobby legislators on behalf of the Brethren for exemption from military service.² His work was later described as follows: "...a comment by Samuel Cline, a Dunker from Augusta County to whom Confederate Congressman John Baldwin wrote, asking Cline for the 'best thing that he had on nonresistance,' suggests that the Dunkers may have been influential also. Cline sent Baldwin a copy of W. C. Thurman's pamphlet on *Peace Principles of the Brethren*, which was published in that same year. Later Baldwin wrote Cline that 'Thurman's pamphlet did the work'"³

Below are excerpts from *The Olive Branch of Peace and Goodwill to Men*⁴ and *A History of the Brethren in Virginia*,⁵ which give detailed accounts of each group and list some of the members.

Beginning with *The Olive Branch of Peace and Goodwill to Men*:

"There were two companies of Brethren and Mennonites that left their homes in the Valley during the month of March, 1862, for the purpose of going to the West. The first named, about eighteen in number, were captured near Moorefield, W.Va., and brought by way of Woodstock and Mount Jackson to Harrisonburg, Va. The next named, about seventy in number, were captured near Petersburg, W.Va., and were taken by way of Franklin, Monterey and Staunton to Richmond, Va., where they were kept in prison till released by authority of Confederate Congress on condition of paying a fine of five hundred dollars each.



Frederick Cline

We have the following names in the first company as given by George S. Wine of Herington, Kansas, (1898), he being one of the number: J. M. Cline,⁶ John A. Cline,⁷ Daniel Miller, Christian Miller, Samuel Wine, John Swartz, Hugh Brunk, Daniel Her, Jackson Showalter, George Hollar, Philip Hollar, Robert Hollar, and Henry Neiswander.

Among those in the second company we have the following names as given by Benjamin Miller, of Samuel, now living in Madison, Kansas, he being one of the number: Joseph a Miller, David M. Miller, Daniel Wine, Frederic Cline⁸, Martin Cline⁹, Noah Garber, Joel Garber, Isaac Showalter, Samuel Humbert, Martin Wenger, five of Gabriel Heatwole's boys and two of his sons-in-law.

J. M. Cline,¹⁰ Daniel Miller and George S. Wine have each written an account of the experiences of the first company. They are ministers in the Brethren church and are men of sterling character and influence. Their accounts agree in the main throughout. Brother J. M. Cline of Knightly,¹¹ Augusta Co, Va., gives a complete narrative of the first company as follows:

We started after night from Brother Jacob Miller's and rode all night. On the next day we came to the camp of the pickets. We rode on as unconcerned as possible, trusting in Providence; but after passing the camp

about a mile some of our number said, 'Look out! yonder they come after us.' We increased our speed a little; but some of the brethren called on us to stop, as a number of the party could not ride fast. So we all checked up, except one or two that rode on and got away. I think the most of us could have gotten away, but we had each other's welfare at heart. We knew, if some of us should get away, it would only make it worse for the rest. We were then in sight of Moorefield,¹² and we were consulting how we could get through the place. Some thought we could go around through the mountains, but we did not have the pleasure of getting into or around Moorefield.¹³ As soon as we all stopped, more of the pickets came up, and we were taken back to picket camp where they kept us till next day. In the evening they took all our money and everything we had from us. Some of us never received anything back, while I believe some did.

They put us all in a room, where we lay on the floor with our budgets¹⁴ for a pillow. But we had worship before we retired. We prayed for our release, and for our captors. The next day they brought us over through the mountains to Woodstock. They let us ride on our own horses, and at different places we saw chances to make our escape, but the thought was with us all the time that if some of us do make our escape, it will only make it harder for the rest.

At last we got to Woodstock, and we were then relieved of our horses, saddles and bridles for good. We could see them from our prison windows, riding our horses around. The next day they walked us up to Mount Jackson with our budgets to carry the best way we could. At Mount Jackson they put us into a large upper room. We did not omit having worship, and some of the guards were seemingly affected. For a day or two this was our lodging place, but we were then brought to the upper end of town and put in a little room with guards around the doors. A part of the time we had to go nearly up to the river where there was a large barn to load wagons. This was generally after night. Sometimes two or three guards would take all of us, and we would string out far enough that they could not see us all. They would call to us to keep closer together, but we often got far enough apart to get away, if we had tried to do so.

At last the time came to move us up to Harrisonburg. They marched us up the pike to the Bethlehem church¹⁵ without anything to eat that day, but sometime in the night they got us something to eat. The next day they brought us up to Harrisonburg, and some of us nearly gave out on the way.

A man by the name of Miller had charge of us as well as the guards, and to show his authority, he would every now and then say, 'Close up the

prisoners!' This he did to show his authority. But he came to a bad end at last. I think he never did any good.

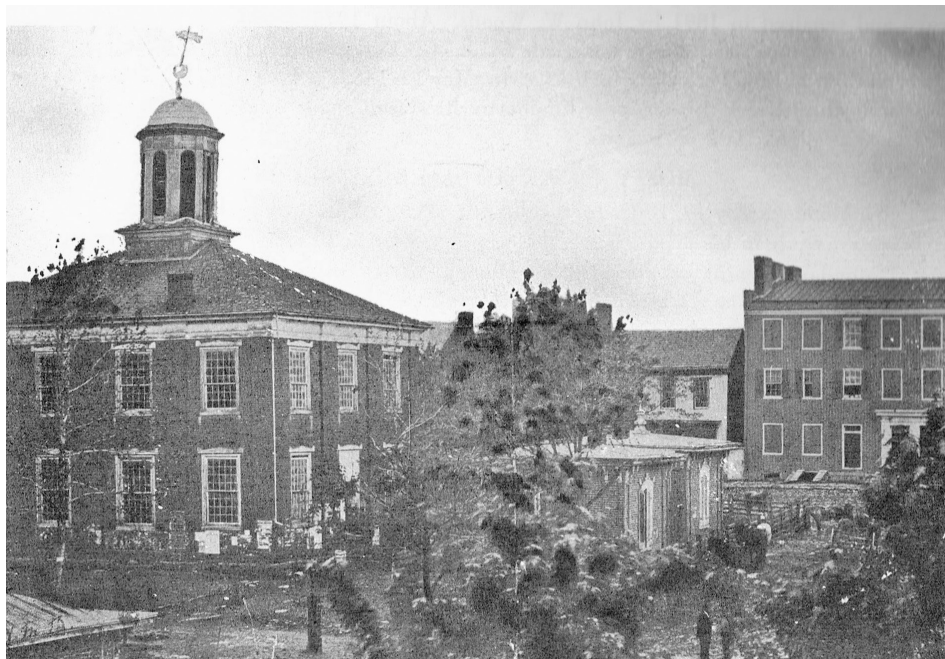
When we arrived at Harrisonburg, we had the honor of having our home for about two weeks in the courthouse. Here we were fed principally by friends who brought us boxes and baskets of good things to eat. After we were there a few days we all got a kind of epizootic [sic] and had it not been for Brother John Kline, it did seem that we could not have lived. It did seem that the Lord had him to come there to take care of us. As a physician he took care of us in our sickness, and as a minister he preached for us several times at night and on each Sunday.

They had us working also in Harrisonburg, loading and unloading wagons. Some one of the officers had given orders to the soldiers not to allow anyone to come near the windows. On night a young man was standing at a window but was not doing anything, when 'snap' went a gun, the ball just missing him, going on up through the ceiling of the room, filling his face and eyes full of glass.

After we had been there about two weeks, my father¹⁶ came with authority from the government for our release. He and Brother Benjamin Byerly had gone to Richmond and got Mr. John Baldwin of Staunton, to work for the passage of a bill to release our people from military service. Mr. Baldwin in his address before Confederate Congress stated that the Brethren were an industrious people that they would work and raise grain for the government, but they would not fight, and it was useless to force



Bethlehem Church at Tenth Legion



Rockingham County Courthouse of Civil War era

them into the army. He got a law passed not only for our people, but for all non-resistants."

Knightly, Augusta Co., Va., Feb. 4, 1898

(End of Excerpt from *The Olive Branch of Peace*.)

In his book, *John Kline Among His Brethren or How He Filled His Place*, the Rev. Charles E. Nair gives us some additional details on the group imprisoned in Harrisonburg. Rev. Nair relied primarily on the diary of Elder John Kline of Broadway, Va., who was also imprisoned with the group in Harrisonburg. This Elder John Kline was a first cousin to our gr. gr. grandfather Christian Kline, subject of this article. Therefore, Elder John Kline was a first cousin, once removed, to fellow prisoners, J. M. Cline and John A. Cline. The following Elder John Kline diary entries come from Nair's book.

"Saturday, April 5. (1862) This afternoon I am about home. In the afternoon I am taken to Harrisonburg and put in the guard house. My place is in the large jury room of the court house up stairs, with others who are captives with myself. Rain this evening.

Sunday April 6. (1862) Rain and snow all last night, and continues on so all day. Have preaching in our captive hall.

Monday April 7. Rain and snow with sleet came down all day. Room very damp and cold, with insufficient fire. Several Brethren come to see me today.

Tuesday, April 8. Rain and snow continues as on yesterday. Our room very uncomfortable.

Wednesday, April 9. Still cloudy, with rain and snow. We have some pleasant conversations in the prison, with books and papers. But all the public prints are so filled and taken up with war that they give me but little enjoyment. The minds and spirits of nearly all the prisoners are so broken down by the state and prospects of the country that interesting and instructive conversations can hardly be held.

Monday April 14. Today our two Brethren John and Joseph Kline, are released from imprisonment and start for home tonight."

(End of quotations from Rev. Nair's book.)

Apparently, Christian Kline had come to Harrisonburg from Richmond with authorization only for his sons, John and Joseph to be released. The remainder of the Harrisonburg prisoners were not released until April 18, four days later.

The story resumes with an excerpt from *The Olive Branch of Peace and Goodwill to Men*

COMPANY 2, CAPTURED IN WEST VIRGINIA AND SENT TO RICHMOND.

(Gr. Gr. Grandfather Fred Cline and his brother Martin were in this group.)

Joseph A. Miller was born near Sangerville, Augusta Co., Va., Nov. 29, 1825. He was called to the ministry in the spring of 1863, and his labors have been principally in the mountains of West Virginia. He was at the Annual Meeting, which was held at Beaver Creek church, Va., in 1861. He lives in the old home where he was born, and is as true to the Bible and the teaching of the meek and lowly Savior of men, as he has been to the place of his nativity. Strictly conscientious and trustful in the Lord with an unwavering confidence, his interesting narrative of the second company of Brethren and Mennonites who were captured in West Virginia is worthy of careful study and reflection. His narrative is as follows:

"In the early part of March, 1862, having been informed that all the men subject to military duty would be called to arms in a very few days, Brother David M. Miller and myself concluded to do something to keep out of the war. We heard of some Brethren and others intending to go west, and we made preparations to go too, being hurried by our wives, who feared we would be arrested and taken to the army before we got started. So we lost no time in preparation.

After traveling about twelve miles, we fell in company with about seventy others—Brethren, Mennonites and others. The conclusion among us was to cross the line to West Virginia. So with the Shenandoah Mountain before us, we proceeded, going part of the way during the night. The next day we traveled on west, and the next night we lodged at a friend's house, resting on the floor. The next day we arrived at Petersburg, W. Va. Now a good many persons came out to see us cross the South Branch of the Potomac River, it being fifty yards or more wide, and more than half our company were on foot, so that in crossing some horses had to go three trips before all had passed over the stream. It seemed to be a great curiosity for the people to see us cross the Branch and to go through the town.

Soon after passing this place came the trouble, as we then thought, but it seemed that the good Lord did not think as we did; he prepared a better way for our escape than we had marked out for ourselves. After going through Petersburg, he sent two men to cause a halt in our journey, one in front, and one in the rear. The man in front made use of some hard words, but the man in the rear was kind. We halted, and at their solicitation we turned back to Petersburg. They took us into a large upper room and as we passed in by the door we were asked individually whether we had any arms. When the question was put to me, I answered, 'Yes.' 'Let us see it,' said he. I showed him my New Testament, the Sword of the Spirit. He said, 'That is very good; you can keep that.' I do not think there were any arms found in our company, except one or two small pistols, and they were not with the Brethren. We were furnished a snack for dinner.

One brother Mennonite, who had talked of going back before we got to Petersburg, and I had encouraged him to go on, said to me, 'What are you going to do now?' I replied, 'Stand still and see the salvation of the Lord.' My brother, D. M. Miller, and I had near relatives in Hampshire county, about thirty miles further on, and we expected to lodge with them until we could go back home; and the Lord let us all go within a few miles of the line between the Northern and Southern armies, then turned us back by the hand of two men. How good he is; but we could not see it at that time. We wanted to go on.

We were next ordered to leave the upper room and travel south towards Franklin, the county seat of Pendleton County, West Virginia. We were guarded by eight or ten men. Not reaching Franklin that day, we lodged with Mr. Bond, where one of our company (not a brother) got away. A brother and myself had all chances to get away that night, but we had no desire to leave the brethren. The next night we lodged in the court house

in Franklin, sleeping on the floor, and guarded. At this place, six or seven others, that had been captured as we were, joined our number, making in all about seventy-eight. During the night, six of us were taken out one at a time, and asked where we were going, and the reason why. We told them the truth, that we were going away only to keep from fighting, that it was contrary to our faith, and contrary to the Gospel to fight and kill our fellow-man,—entirely wrong to do so. We were not abused. At this place one brother lost his horse and his clothes.

The next day we went twenty-four miles to Monterey, the county seat of Highland county, Virginia. Then next morning we started for Staunton, Va., distant fifty-two miles. We had a barrel of crackers and a few pieces of bacon on a wagon. It took us two days to go through and over the foothills and to cross the Shenandoah Mountain and while we were going over the mountain, one brother got away. In going tip the mountain pathway on foot, some one else riding my horse along the main road, we were scattered very much. It seems that the guards had confidence in us. Brother Cool and I were walking together, and I was showing him where I was acquainted. We had got so much scattered that no one was in sight of us in front or rear. Brother Cool said, 'Let us slip.' I replied, 'I do not feel to do so.' We continued on the way till we came to an old vacant house where we lodged for the night. The officer of the guards said, 'Gentlemen, I will trust to your honor to-night.' Then he and the guards went away about half a mile to get their lodging. After they were gone, Brother Thompson said to me, 'Some of the brethren talk about running off to-night; what do you think about it?' I said, 'I do not like that.' Said he, 'Suppose we send for the guards?' I said, 'Do so,' and they were soon there, drew us into line and counted us. They had so much confidence in us that they thought we would stay without being guarded, but Satan might have made us all dishonest that night had we not been watchful of ourselves and on our guard.

The next day we went to Staunton, Augusta Co., Va., and lodged in the courthouse. We got plenty to eat. The guards were overheard saying, 'Don't tell them that they have to go to Richmond to-morrow; they will not sleep well.' It would have disturbed us some, if we had known it; for we did not yet know that Richmond was the place the Lord had directed us to go.

In the morning after breakfast, with some crackers in our pockets, and a little sadness in our hearts, we started on the train for Richmond, distant 120 miles, leaving our horses and saddles in the care of some one else. We were all day and part of the night on the way to Richmond. After reaching our destination, we were put into a large room in a machine house with a

small stove. There was about three yards in one corner to which we had no access. The officer said, 'Gentlemen, this is the best we can do for you to-night; make yourselves easy.' This was the most unpleasant night for me on the trip. The weather being cool, with no fire and no bed, some of us walked nearly all night. Next morning breakfast came about 9 o'clock, but it came plentiful. We staid in that house one night only, then we were moved to a more comfortable house, and furnished with bedding and provisions.

In a day or two twelve of us were taken before Judge Baxter, and he said, 'Gentlemen, I will ask you a good many questions, and if I ask any that you cannot answer, you need not say anything.' He then asked many questions concerning what we had been doing during the war, and whether we had been in the service. He also asked us whether we had fed the soldiers and their families. We answered all his questions save one, and the judge was kind enough to answer that for us; which was, 'Would you feed the enemy, should he come to your house?' He said, 'We are commanded to feed our enemies.' This was a correct answer. Before dismissing us the judge said that we would be sent home soon to work on our farms.

Just at this time the Confederate Congress was in session in Richmond, and some of the members of Congress came 'in to see us. Some of them wanted us to volunteer to drive teams; but we told them we left home to keep out of the war, and that we did not propose to go into the army service. Others wanted to know all about our faith, and we gave them all the information about our religious belief that we could.

They also found out that twenty-five of our people were in prison in Harrisonburg, who had been arrested as we were, and that many others had gone through the lines, and we were, told they got the question up in Congress, 'What would we better do with these men? They raise more grain to the hand than any farmers we have, and they are nearly all laboring men, and we need them at home as much as in the army. Would we not better make some provision for them, or they will all leave the country? If we force them into the army, they will not fight.

These things were brought to us in the guardhouse. So the question was considered in Congress, and they reached the conclusion to lay a fine on us, and send us home. The fine was fixed at five hundred dollars each. This may look like a large sum, but the Brethren at home soon sent the money to us, and we paid it, and went home. The poor brethren as well as the rich had their fine paid. It was not long after that till a good horse sold for a thousand dollars which paid two fines. This fine paid in 1862 cleared us during the war, which lasted three years more.



(Top left) Castle Thunder in Richmond during the Civil War; (bottom left) Castle Thunder today., on East Cary and 19th Streets, looking west.



We were in Richmond thirty days. A few days before we left Richmond, six of its were taken before Judge Baxter again. He treated us very kindly, and expressed his sore regret that we had been kept there so long, when we should have been at home on our farms. He said the delay was on account of the press of business, and that we would soon be sent home, which came to pass. We were joyfully received at home by our families and the brethren. We were absent from home in all thirty-seven clays. Our horses were kept in Staunton and put into service, but we received pay for them from the government. No money was taken from any of our company, and upon the whole we were kindly treated.

We think the Lord's will was done by our being captured and taken

to Richmond where the law-making body was assembled, and they saw that we were determined to hold to our God-given faith, and they could say nothing against it.

Our love to all who read this.

D. H.

Sangerville, Augusta Co., Va. December, 1897.

David M. Miller also wrote an account of this group in 1906 that appeared in *A History of the Brethren in Virginia* as follows:

"I would like to give you a complete history, of our experiences while in captivity, but it has been so long since it happened that I have forgotten some things. I know we started about five weeks before April 17, 1862, for we had a son born on that date I was gone six weeks and when I got home, the boy was a week old.

There were sixty-two Brethren and Mennonites with eight or ten who were members of no church left our homes at the time stated above. When we got about a mile beyond Petersburg we saw some persons, we thought were soldiers riding. They got ahead of us and stopped in a narrow place in the road. They took us back to Petersburg and searched us but found no weapon except one small revolver, but some of us had Testaments. They then started with us for Staunton, Augusta County.

The first night we fared very well. The next morning one man got away and also the next evening another man dodged out while we were on the march. The second night we were closely guarded. In two more days we reached Staunton and lodged in the courthouse. The next morning we were put on the train and sent to Richmond where we were put in a tobacco house and closely guarded. We were then moved to another house. Here some of the Brethren and some of the Mennonites were taken for examination. After this we were released by paying \$500 and two percent on what each one was worth. A Bro. Cline¹⁷ took the Augusta Brethren out and Bro. B. F. Byerly took us out who lived in Rockingham. They then sent us on the train to Waynesboro, and from there we went on foot. When I got home there was a boy about a week old.

I have written this to the best of my recollection. David M. Miller"¹⁸

Also in *A History of the Brethren in Virginia*, is another account which further substantiates Christian Kline's role in the release of the prisoners.

"At a general council meeting held at Middle River church, Benjamin F. Byerly and Christian Kline were appointed to go to Richmond to secure their release."¹⁹

The Southern Claims Commission, Christian Kline and his son, Joseph M. Cline

In the book, *Unionists and the Civil War Experience in the Shenandoah Valley*, there is a very good introduction to the Southern Claims Commission, why it was established and how it worked.²⁰

Following the war, the Government received thousands of appeals from allegedly loyal Southerners for payments for goods and supplies given or taken under Union occupation. These pleas for payment could scarcely be ignored in light of the fact that the Federals had encouraged Unionism during the war and had actively sought to organize resistance and provide support and aid to them. Difficult problems, however, existed in satisfying these claims. Accurate assessment of a citizen's loyalty needed to be made. Very frequently, claimants lacked valid receipts of vouchers, meaning that other time consuming methods such as calling witnesses and examining official records needed to be developed in order to examine the validity of specific claims. A healthy skepticism prevailed regarding the accuracy of statements of loss, and undoubtedly the losses were exaggerated by some of the claimants. The ethic of the Anabaptists stressed honesty and integrity. Nevertheless, their claims were treated with the usual amount of skepticism.

Finally, Congress realized that these claims needed more systematic and specialized processing. Six years after the war, on March 3, 1871, the Southern Claims Commission was established by Congress and given jurisdiction over the matter of claims against the Federal Government."

U. S. Southern Claims Commission – Allowed Claim # 2578

Joseph M. Cline of Knightly Mill, three miles southeast of Mt. Sidney, Va. He was a brother to gr. gr. grandfather Frederick Cline and son of Christian Kline.

Several of the Clines testified to the Southern Claims Commission. One of them, Joseph M. Cline, gave the following statement on September 18, 1871:

"I am 34 years. I reside in Augusta Co., Va. I am by occupation a farmer.... the said supplies were taken from the mill²¹ of your petitioner, situated three miles south of Mount Sidney, Augusta County, Virginia and that the horses in the foregoing schedule were taken by the Union soldiers under command of Major General Hunter. Your petitioner further said that he had a conversation with these troops that taken the above mentioned horses and all they said to your petitioner was that he would get pay for them. This being all the horses your petitioner had at that time is what caused the above remarks to be made, these being on the advance the same

evening immediately after the Piedmont fight. Therefore, they said they needed them and no receipts were given or vouchers of any kind and as for the cow of September 1864 your petitioner says she was taken by the troops under command of Major Phillip Sheridan, not knowing if officers or not as being done hastily late in the evening at the time of the Burning of your petitioners mill, they then was driving the cow toward camp which was camped at Mt. Sidney.

Your petitioner Joseph M. Cline, will just say to your honorable court that at the time of the burning of my mill, there were fires all around in the neighborhood of barns that were burned for the purpose of suppressing the rebellion. My loss of property has been heavy for a man just beginning in business as I lost two fine horses taken by the Rebels at the time I tried to make my escape to the west with the number of men captured brought back and imprisoned; some of us to Harrisonburg and others to Richmond, remained in prison about 1 month was released by paying our fines.

Witness says I was arrested by the Confederate Government in 1862 or 1863. I was arrested while making an effort to get into the Union lines by a Captain of the Confederate Army, whose name I have forgotten.

Witness says I had two horses taken. I was paid for them.

Witness says I had a cousin in the Confederate Army and several in the Union Army.

Witness says...I was ready and willing at all times to do all in my power (except to bear arms, which my profession, a minister in the Tunkard Church forbid me to do) to aid and assist the said cause.



Knightly Mill Site

The deposition of Christian Kline was also given to prove the taking of property charged in claimant's petition."

"Witness says I am 62 years old. I reside in Augusta Co., Va. I am a farmer. I was present when all the articles named in the petition were taken. I saw them taken, two horses and saw the cow in their possession.

Witness says the army was encamped at Piedmont, about one mile from claimant. The Army was only there one day and night. The battle of Piedmont took place the same day the horses were taken.

Witness says I am 62 years old. I reside in Augusta Co., Va. and am a farmer. I have known the claimant all his life – I live very near him, and knew him intimately during the rebellion. I have no doubt of his loyalty to the Union and he was generally regarded so by his neighbors. He assisted persons in getting to the Union lines, and made the attempt to go himself but was caught by the rebels."**End of Allowed Claim #2578**

Claim of Christian Kline #2503

Christian Kline made a \$550 claim for four horses and three milk cows, taken by the Union army on June 5 and September 29, 1864. One of the horses was taken after the Battle of Piedmont (June 5), which was fought about a mile away. The other stock was impounded during Sheridan's "Burning" of the Valley in September

Following are excerpts from the testimony of Christian Kline:

"The roan horse was taken by General Hunter's army in the year 1864. It was on the 5th day of June. The horse was in the stable when taken. A squad of men came and took the horse. No conversation took place when the horse was taken. I did not try to recover the horse. I did not ask for



Middle River at Knightly Mill

or receive any receipt. The other three horses and the three cows were taken by General Sheridan's army at the time he made his Burning Raid through the Valley. The horses were in the field, except one, and the cows were in the field. The army passed along the road by my house and drove all this stock away. There was no conversation held at the time. There were a large number of soldiers present who took the horses and cattle."

In support of his claim, Christian Kline had the depositions of his sons and two other men who knew him.

Martin Kline gave the following statement:

"I am 30 years old and live near New Hope, Augusta, County. ... I was present and saw one horse taken from the claimant at the time of the fight at Piedmont, ... and three horses and three cows at the time of the Burning Raid under Sheridan. ... Two of these horses were in the field back of the barn and one was in the stable. ... I saw my father ride the horse down to the river where the Union troops were and saw him come back in a few minutes without the horse. The army was passing my father's farm at the time, and it took all this stock away with them. The army was encamped three or four miles off."

Frederick M. Kline noted: "I am a farmer....I was present and saw three horses taken at the time of Sheridan's Burning Raid by the United States troops. The horses were driven down the lane from the barn in my presence. I also saw them driving away four cows and one heifer, belonging to my father."

Joseph M. Kline gave the following statement: "I am 34 years old. I reside in Augusta County, by profession a Minister of the Gospel. I was present when the articles mentioned in the claimant's petition were taken.... The articles were taken during General Sheridan's raid....The property was taken about four o'clock in the day."

John Yates, John Wampler, and Daniel Miller (Frederick Kline, above, married Miller's daughter, Nancy) testified to the loyalty of Christian Kline to the United States during the war. They stated that he was known as a "Union" man.

In spite of these testimonies the claim was rejected. The reasoning, according to the Commission documents was as follows:

It is a suspicious circumstance the claimant fails to answer question 10 which amongst other things relates to the employment of a substitute. He does swear that he owned a mill and sold supplies to the Rebel Army and received pay therefore and that he obtained passes and used them to go to Staunton and to Richmond.²² Only one witness, and he, of the same



Land farmed by Christian Kline along Middle River at Knightly. View is to the east.

name and probably a near relative, is called to prove loyalty. We are not satisfied with the evidence of loyalty and therefore reject the claim.

The Claims Commission was thorough in its work. They researched the Confederate archives and found that Christian Kline had sold \$195 of corn to the government on October 19, 1863. There were also two other vouchers for "C. Kline" at Staunton, November 23, 1863, and August 22, 1864, for corn and hay, \$660. On March 13, 1863, a Christian Kline was paid \$17 for hauling forage for the Confederate Quarter Master. In general, the transaction of business with the Confederacy was considered an act of disloyalty.

Christian's son, Martin, continued to appeal this claim as late as 1906, which was long after his father's death. There is no evidence that it was ever paid.

End of Claim #2503.

Endnotes

¹Our gr. gr. grandfather. We are descended from him though his daughter, Martha, who married John H. Huff, Jr. They were the parents of Icie Huff Diehl.

²Zigler, D. H., *A History of the Brethren in Virginia* Elgin, IL; Brethren Publishing House 1908, 98.

³Ibid.

⁴Sanger, S. F., and D. Hays. *The Olive Branch of Peace and Goodwill to Men*, Elgin, IL: Brethren Publishing House, 1907.

⁵Zigler, D. H., *op cit*.

⁶Elder Joseph M. Cline (1836-1909), son of Christian Kline of Augusta Co, Va. Cline-Kline Family, Paul Kline, Shenandoah Press, Dayton, Va. 1971. Christian Kline and his sons were members of Middle River Church of the Brethren, near New Hope, Va.

⁷John A. Cline (1833-1893), also a son of Christian Kline.

⁸Frederick Cline (1838-1915), son of Christian Kline and our gr. gr. grandfather.

⁹Martin Cline (1842-1923), son of Christian Kline.

¹⁰Our gr. gr. gr. uncle.

¹¹Knightly Mill on the Middle River in Augusta County was owned and run by Christian Kline and his son, Joseph Cline in the late 1800s.

¹²Present-day West Virginia.

¹³Moorefield is about seventy miles north of Harrisonburg, Va., over the Allegheny Mountain.

¹⁴Archaic meaning of budget is a small pouch.

¹⁵At Tenth Legion, Va. on Route 11, a few miles south of New Market.

¹⁶Christian Kline, our gr. gr. gr. grandfather.

¹⁷Gr. Gr. Gr Grandfather Christian Kline.

¹⁸David Miller was a cousin to our Miller ancestors in the Mount Sidney area.

¹⁹*A History of the Brethren in Virginia*, 105, 106.

²⁰David Rodes, Norman Wenger & Emmert F. Bittenger, *Unionists and the Civil War Experience in the Shenandoah Valley*, Vol. 1., The Valley Brethren-Mennonite Heritage Center and Penobscot Press, 2003, 13.

²¹Knightly Mill on Middle River. The mill was on the south side of the river where State Route 778 (Knightly Mill Road) crosses it.

²²These passes were undoubtedly obtained in 1862 when Christian traveled to Richmond to secure the release of son's Frederick and Martin from Castle Thunder prison.

Augusta African-American men who served with the Union in the Civil War

By Donna Huffer

The information for this article was supplied by the Staunton-Augusta County African American Research Society and was taken from the group's exhibit at the Staunton Public Library. The society's mission statement is "To research, develop and maintain an ongoing written pictorial and media archive of armed services, social and cultural events in the Staunton and Augusta County, Virginia, area from 1865 to present."

37th United States Colored Infantry

The 37th U.S. Colored Troops were organized in the winter of 1863 in Norfolk, Virginia, by Lt. Colonel Chamberlain. They were the first African-American Regiment formed during the Civil War. This regiment and other troops like it led to the forming of the Buffalo Soldiers after the war ended. The 37th participated in the following battles: Second Battle of Petersburg June 27, 1864, New Market Heights September 7, 1864, Fort Harrison, Virginia, September 30, 1864, Battle of Fair Oaks October 27, 1864, Fort Fisher December 3, 1864, Fort Fisher June 1865, Sugar Loaf February 12, 1865, Wilmington N.C. February 21, 1865, North-East Station N.C. February 22, 1865, and Cox's Bridge March 24, 1865.

Augusta County African Americans who joined this regiment were: Daniel Pompey, David Mason, Barry Mason, Kennedy Paley, Stephen Blunt, John Witch, and Isaac Pree.

55th Massachusetts Infantry

The 55th Massachusetts Infantry was a volunteer regiment made up of African Americans recruited by abolitionists. Frederick Douglas and William Lloyd Garrison sent out a call urging African Americans to fight for their freedom. So many joined that medical examinations were done to exclude the unfit.

African Americans who fought in the regiment were paid six dollars less than their white counterparts. No one either in the South or North believed African Americans were equal to whites. The black soldiers protested and eventually won their equal pay when Congress passed a bill approving the action.

The regiment trained at Camp Meigs near Readville, Massachusetts. They were shipped to South Carolina where they served on picket duty and dug trenches. In 1864 they followed General Seymour in the Florida invasion and took part in the Battle of Olustee in February. After that, they returned to South Carolina where they fought on James Island and in the Battle of Honey Hill.

The regiment joined General Sherman's forces and took Columbia. They marched to Charleston where they met crowds of liberated slaves and free blacks who welcomed them. The regiment remained in South Carolina and participated in the Battles of Briggen Creek and Saint Stephens in March of 1865. After the surrender of Lee, they remained in Charleston until they were returned to Boston and the regiment dissolved.

Members from Augusta County include: Andrew Berry, William Burns, and Henry Shelton.

8th United States Colored Infantry

The 8th United States Colored Infantry was made up of African Americans commanded by white officers. The force was created on May 22, 1863, by a War Department that recognized the importance of this valuable resource. The 8th was organized at Camp William Penn in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, beginning September 22, 1863, and disbanded on December 12, 1865, at Philadelphia.

The regiment was part of Howell's Brigade, District of Hilton Head, South Carolina, in February 1864. From there, the men marched to Jacksonville, Florida, for an occupation of the town. They participated in the Battle of Olustee on February 20, 1864. They retreated to Jacksonville where they stayed until April 1864. They were moved to Deep Bottom, Virginia, in August 1864, where they dug trenches. They fought in the Battle of Chaffin's Farm at New Market Heights in September 1864. From there, they were part of the Battles of Fort Harrison, Darbytown Road, Battle of Fair Oaks, and Battle of Richmond. They were present at the Appomattox Campaign, saw the fall of Petersburg, and pursued Lee to Appomattox where the war ended. They remained in Petersburg until May when they sailed from City Point to Texas. They served at Ringgold Barracks and the Rio Grande until November of 1865. Then they returned to Philadelphia. The regiment lost 115 men killed in fighting and 132 men from disease.

Members from Augusta County who served in the infantry were: George Miner, William Turner, John Ukkerd, John Witch, and Jesse Wise.

Miscellaneous images of African-American soldiers from the Civil War. Found on the Library of Congress website. The identities of these soldiers are not known.



5th United States Colored Infantry

The 5th U.S. Colored Infantry was part of the 127th Ohio Volunteer Infantry, formed at Camp Delaware, Ohio. It was moved to Norfolk, Virginia, in November of 1863. In January of 1864, the regiment participated in Brigadier General Edward Wild's march to South Mills, Camden Court House, and Sandy Swamp in North Carolina.

The regiment then moved to Yorktown, Virginia, where it aided in attacking Richmond in February 1864. The men helped capture New Kent Court House in March 1864, and subdued King and Queen County, Mathews County, and Middlesex County that same month. The 5th participated in the capture of City Point, Virginia, in May 1864.

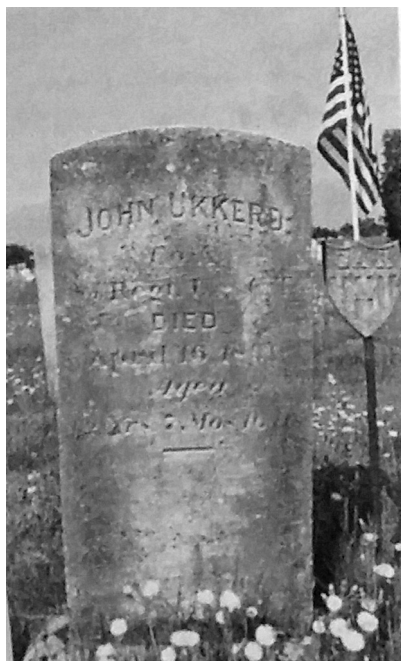
The regiment took part in General Benjamin Butler's operations on the James River, digging trenches around Richmond and Petersburg. They were in the Battle of the Crater in July 1864. The men joined other African-American troops at Deep Bottom, the Battle of Chaffin's Farm, and Fort Harrison. They went on to the Battle of Fair Oaks in October and then returned to the trenches around Richmond. Four members of the 5th received the Medal of Honor for their bravery: Powhatan Beaty, James Bronson, Milton Holland, and Robert Pinn.

The regiment followed the 37th Infantry and other African-American regiments to the Battles of Fort Fisher, Sugar Loaf Hill, Federal Point, and Wilmington in North Carolina. They joined General Sherman's Carolinas Campaign in March of 1865 and advanced through North Carolina to Raleigh where Confederate General Johnston surrendered. The regiment was mustered out on September 20, 1865, after two years of heavy fighting. A total of 246 men were killed in action and 166 men died of disease. As to the valor of the men, General Butler said, "So far as the conduct of the color-sergeant, Milton Holland, was concerned, in the charge at New Market Heights, had it been within my power I would have conferred upon him in view of it, a brigadier-generalship for gallantry on the field."

African-American men who served in the 5th from Augusta County were: William H. Scott, James Cooper, William Goins, and Samuel Spear.

Here is more information about some of those men.

John Uckerd (Ukkerd): John Uckerd was born in Augusta County about 1845. He may have been born a slave, but moved to Huntingdon County, Pennsylvania, with his family when he was a boy. Either his family was freed or they escaped with the help of abolitionists. He enlisted



John Ukkerd's tombstone in Chambersburg, Pa.

as a private in Company A, 8th U. S. Colored Troops in 1863. He served two years, was wounded in the fighting, and returned to Pennsylvania. He married Evelina Holms at St. Paul Methodist Church in Chambersburg, Franklin County, Pennsylvania, May 21, 1867. The couple had the following children: William, John, Frank, Edward, and Blanch. He died at age forty-three of tuberculosis and was buried with honor at Lebanon Cemetery in Chambersburg. The following obituary was in the newspaper: "He was a native of Huntingdon County and came here while quite young. He enlisted at Philadelphia as a private in Co. A, 8th Regiment U.S. Colored Troops and served for over two years.

The regiment was first in Florida and afterwards attached to the Army of the Potomac. It was one of the best regiments in the service, had a fine record and best men than any other regiment sent out from this state. Ukkerd was wounded and had a good record as a brave soldier. Since the war he had been a porter for the National, Montgomery and other hotels."

Esquire Thomas: Esquire Thomas was born in Augusta County in 1840. He migrated to Washington County, Ohio, perhaps with his parents. He joined the 27th U.S. Colored Infantry on August 9, 1864, in Marietta, Ohio. He was hostler (a person employed to look after horses) and served as a stable guard during the war. He returned to Ohio after the war, married twice, and had a son George Thomas in 1869.

Samuel Guinn: Samuel Guinn was born in Augusta County in 1842. He joined the 9th United States Colored Heavy Artillery on August 10, 1864, in Pomeroy, Ohio. Many African Americans fled Virginia for a new life of less restrictions in Ohio. Samuel never returned to Virginia. Like a lot of other African Americans, he decided his life would be better in the

Complexion *Black*
 Eyes *Black*; hair *Black*
 Where born *Augusta, Va.*
 Occupation *Laborer*

ENLISTMENT.

When *Aug. 10*, 186*4*
 Where *Pomeroy, Ohio*
 By whom *S. B. Whaley*, term *1* y'rs.
 Remarks: *Credited Pomeroy*
Meiggs, Co., 15th Cong
Dist., Ohio
Transferred to the
85th Regt of U.S. C.
Infy by order of the
War Dept.

Samuel Guinn's military record

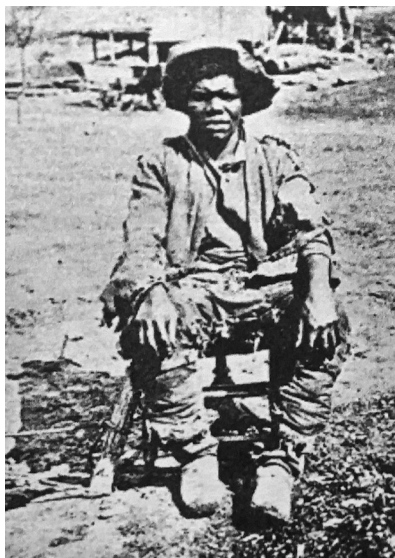
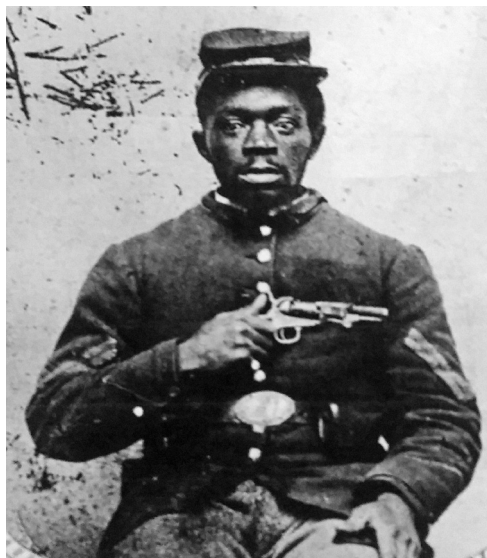
Steven Blunt's military record

Complexion *Blk.*
 Eyes *Blk.*; hair *Blk.*
 Where born *Greenville, Va.*
 Occupation *Laborer*

ENLISTMENT.

When *May 18*, 186*4*
 Where *City Point, Va.*
 By whom *J. M. Moore*, term *3* y'rs.
 Remarks: *Mustered in service*
of U.S. May 25/65. at
City Point, Va. by Capt
Martin.

Miscellaneous images of African-American soldiers from the Civil War. Found on the Library of Congress website. The identities of these soldiers are not known.



North. He moved to Chicago where there were jobs in industry. He was listed in the 1888 Chicago Voting Registration as a resident of six months.

Samuel Dinwiddie: Samuel Dinwiddie grew up in Waynesboro, Augusta County. He was the son of Nathan Dinwiddie and Sally. Nathan, a free black, owned a confectionary shop. They moved to Ross County, Ohio by 1860. Samuel was drafted along with his brother James. Samuel survived the war and lived in Champaign, Ohio.

Stephen Blunt: Stephen Blunt was born about 1834 in Greenville, Augusta County, Virginia. He joined the 37th U.S. Colored Infantry as a private. He could not read or write. The company was organized on February 8, 1864, in North Carolina. He was stationed in Norfolk and Portsmouth for training. The regiment then joined the 1st Brigade Hinck's Colored Division 18th Corps, Army of the James. He dug trenches at Petersburg and Richmond where he developed rheumatism. The regiment was marched to North Carolina for the Campaign of the Carolinas. He participated in the Battles of Deep Bottom, Chaffin's Farm, New Market Heights, and Fair Oaks. On Jan, 15, 1865, the regiment fought at Fort Fisher, Kinston, Goldsboro, and Raleigh. He was present at the surrender of Confederate General Johnston and his army. The regiment was mustered out on Feb 11, 1867, after service in North Carolina.

Stephen Blunt returned to Virginia after the war and lived in the Petersburg area. He married Alice and had three daughters: Lucy, Maggie, and Eva. Unfortunately, his rheumatism disabled him to the point that he was admitted to the National Home of Disabled Volunteer Soldier in 1898 in Hampton, Virginia. He died there on July 3, 1900.

James Ashby: James Ashby was born in 1839 in Augusta County, Virginia. He joined the 39th U.S. Colored Infantry, Company K at Ellicott's Mills, Maryland. He was a substitute for Monroe Forrest. He served as a teamster for the regiment, hauling men and supplies to the war front. After the war, he moved his family to Calhoun County, West Virginia. He married Minerva Dyer in 1866 in Wood County, West Virginia. He died on February 8, 1886, and his widow then applied for and received a veteran's pension on August 27, 1890. The couple had no children.

William Moker: William Moker was born in 1838 in Augusta County, Virginia. He joined the 9th U. S. Colored Heavy Artillery on August 4, 1864

Eyes *Black*; hair *Black*
 Where born *Augusta, Va.*
 Occupation *Laborer*

ENLISTMENT.
 When *Aug 4*, 18*64*
 Where *Middleport, Ohio,*
 By whom *D. C. Moley*, term *1 y'r.*
 Remarks: *Credited Middleport, Ohio, 15 Cong. Dist. Ohio Corporal.*
Transferred to the 15th Reg't U. S. Inf'ty by order of the War Dept.

William Mocker's military record.

A | **12** | **U.S.C.T.**

John Allen
 _____, Co. *B.*, 12 Reg't U. S. Col'd Inf.

Appears on
Company Descriptive Book
 of the organization named above.

DESCRIPTION.
 Age *27* years; height *5* feet *9* inches.
 Complexion *Dark*
 Eyes *Black*; hair *Black*
 Where born *Augusta, Virginia*
 Occupation *Farmer*

ENLISTMENT.
 When *Oct 3*, 18*64*.
 Where *Cincinnati*
 By whom *2^d Dist. Ph.*; term *1 y'r.*
 Remarks: *Mustered out by expiration of term of service.*

John Allen's military record.

in Middlesport, Ohio. He served as a corporal until he became sick and was transferred to a hospital. He married Matilda Cook. They were living in Meigs County, Ohio, in 1870 where he was employed at the salt works. William and Matilda had three sons: Marshall, George, and Preston. His daughter Sarah married a Dickerson. Like his father, son Marshall had a pioneer spirit. He died in 1919 in Yauapa, Arizona.

James Ashby (old)
Appears with rank of *Private* on
Muster and Descriptive Roll*
of *Detachment of U.S. drafted men forwarded*
Roll dated
Ellicott's Mills, Md., July 9, 1864.
Where born *Augusta Co. Va.*
Age *23* years; occupation *teamster*
When enlisted *July 9, 1864.*
Where enlisted *Ellicott's Mills, Md.*
For what period enlisted *3* years.
Eyes *black*; hair *black*
Complexion *brown*; height *5 ft 10 1/2 in.*
When mustered in *July 9, 1864.*
Where mustered in *Ellicott's Mills, Md.*
Bounty paid \$ *100*; due \$ *100*
Clothing account:
Last settled *186*; drawn since \$ *20.23*
Date of first muster *July 9, 1864.*
Company to which assigned
Remarks: *Substitute for Mon-*
roe Forrest 2nd D. Howard
Co.
*This roll of Drafted Men and Substitutes was made on the form intended for Volunteer Recruits.
Book mark:

G | **16** | **U.S.C.T.**
Thomas Gaskins
Appears with rank of *Pvt* on
Muster and Descriptive Roll of a Detach-
ment of U. S. Vols. forwarded
for the *16 Reg't U.S. Col'd Infantry.* Roll dated
Columbus, Ohio, Feb. 9, 1865.
Where born *Augusta Co., Virginia.*
Age *19* y'rs; occupation *Farmer.*
When enlisted *Feb. 2*, 1865.
Where enlisted *Dayton, Ohio*
For what period enlisted *one* years.
Eyes *Blk*; hair *Blk*
Complexion *Blk*; height *5 ft. 5 in.*
When mustered in *Feb. 2*, 1865.
Where mustered in *Dayton, O.*
Bounty paid \$ *100*; due \$ *100*
Where credited *Oxford Sp. Butler*
Co., 3rd Dist. O.
Company to which assigned

Military records of James Ashby (left) and Thomas Gaskins.

Miscellaneous images of African-American soldiers from the Civil War. Found on the Library of Congress website. The identities of these soldiers are not known.



Augusta Military Academy in WWI

By Morgan Liddick

The year 2017 marked the one hundredth anniversary of America's entry into World War I. The staff and alumni at Augusta Military Academy were deeply involved in the war effort. The story of AMA's involvement in the war as well as the school's nineteenth and twentieth century history is told at the AMA museum located in Fort Defiance, Va., just north of Staunton. Morgan Liddick is a volunteer at the museum.

"Entities should not be multiplied unnecessarily"
William of Ockham, Quodibeta Septem, about 1325

Although America's involvement in the First World War was relatively brief, it was transformative. At 141 years, the United States was a young country compared to the European combatants. It was insular and though an economic powerhouse possessed of a formidable navy, it had almost no army and no air force to speak of. The common assumption was that Europe's incessant wars were Europe's problem – and therefore to be studiously avoided.

All that changed with Woodrow Wilson's declaration to Congress on April 17, 1917. We plunged headlong into a globe-girdling conflict, the first war to apply modern technology to the problem of killing each other with the efficiency of a factory. It changed profoundly many of those who fought in it, and the world in which they lived. In some ways we continue to deal with its effects today.

The Shenandoah Valley and its people were pulled into World War I and felt these effects. Shortly after war came to the United States in 1917, Charles Summerville Roller, Jr., found himself in France, working with ambulance crews as a captain in the Red Cross unit attached to the 89th Division of the American Expeditionary Force.

How he got there is the subject of a number of stories. One holds that the Roller brothers, Thomas and Charles Junior, both sons of the founder of the Augusta Military Academy and graduates of that school, thought that one of them ought to volunteer so they drew straws – or flipped a coin – to determine which one would volunteer. Another more plausible explanation is that since Charles had just graduated from the Virginia



Major Hulvey



Captain Roller

Military Institute and had earlier volunteered for, but not served in, the Spanish-American War, he was the logical choice.

Whatever the reason, Capt. Roller was with the division during the German counterattack after the St. Mihiel offensive, and from the Meuse-Argonne offensive through the occupation of Germany by the Division in 1919.¹ There is a photograph in the academy's museum of Capt. Roller in his uniform taken, according to the note on the back, in Bitburg, Germany, early that year.² Thereafter, he returned to the U.S. and resumed his position at Augusta Military Academy in Fort Defiance, Va., where he would remain for the rest of his life.

Another alumnus, Charles Nelson Hulvey, graduated from Augusta Military Academy in 1904, enrolled in Sweetwater College and graduated with an associate's degree in 1906. He enlisted in the U.S. Army, attended the U.S. Army's Graduate Service School in Oklahoma City and received both master of law and juris doctor degrees through the University of Oklahoma.

In 1912, he was promoted to captain in the Third Tennessee Infantry (militia). When it was incorporated into the 59th Brigade of the 30th Division (U.S. Army Reserves) in 1916, Hulvey was promoted to major.³ He was sent to France in 1917 – one of the first.

Although many service records of this time are unavailable, if he was still with the 59th Brigade in 1918, he would have been involved in breaking of the Hindenburg Line near Bellicourt, in October 1918.

In 1919, Major Hulvey became Commandant of Cadets at the North Carolina State College of Agriculture and Engineering. He retained the post for three years.⁴ He was also a founding member of the American Legion and the State Secretary for Tennessee in this period.

By 1924, Hulvey was an assistant professor of Commercial Law at the University of Virginia. He was a sought-after local speaker on economic subjects as well as an essayist for national periodicals. He wrote many research monographs on new economic topics such as workmen's compensation, liability and crop insurance and was the author of several economics textbooks, including *Commercial Law for Students in Schools of Business Administration* (1926); *Solutions and Discussions of the Problems in Commercial Law: Principles and Cases* (1930); *The Mathematics of Finance: Principles and Problems* (1934); and *Commercial Law* (published posthumously in 1939).

In 1930, Professor Hulvey became president of the American Business Law Association. He died unexpectedly in 1937 at age fifty-two.

A third AMA alumnus, John East, has a fascinating trajectory of experience. He grew up on a farm in Augusta County, graduated from Augusta Military Academy in 1913, and the Virginia Polytechnic Institute



The 12th Aero Squadron with A Salmson. (All photos courtesy AMA)



Officers and men of the 1st Aero Squadron the day after Armistice, November 12, 1918.

(now Virginia Tech) in 1917. He then joined the U.S. Army and became a member of the First Aero Squadron, the predecessor of the U.S. Army Air Corps and eventually, the U.S. Air Force.

Transferred to France in 1917, Lt. East became a gunner-observer, flying a French Salmson SA-2 heavy observation aircraft. He flew many patrols, the last fifty with his friend and pilot Lt. John F. McCormick. On November 3, 1918, they attacked a German supply train and were in process of attacking German machine-gun nests when Lt. McCormick was hit by ground fire. Mortally wounded, he managed to bring their machine to the ground, but crashed. Lt. East dragged McCormick from the burning machine before it exploded, but he died of his wounds. East was then captured by German troops.

After being imprisoned in a village church, he was repatriated following the Armistice and rejoined his unit on November 15. Lt. East returned to the U.S. on November 19, 1918.⁵ East returned to his farm in Augusta County and lived the rest of his life there. He married Evelyn Witt in 1919 and was actively involved in farming, various businesses, government and community affairs. He was an aviation pioneer, war hero, and prisoner of war who returned to live out a quiet life among his friends and neighbors until his death in 1970.⁶

These three were typical of the Americans who served in World War I. Their later lives were also typical of the Americans who survived. They returned home and picked up their lives. Others were not so lucky. The

war created a small group of people who were unable to escape its effects – think of the “Lost Generation,” and writers like Ernest Hemmingway.

And there were those for whom the war was an end to a life too short. More than 116,000 Americans died in the war, 53,402 in combat.⁷ The Augusta Military Academy Museum opened a temporary exhibit on April 17, 2017, to honor the eight AMA alumni who gave their lives in “The War to End All Wars.” The museum is open Wednesday-Sunday, 10 a.m.-4 p.m. for any who would like to visit.

Endnotes

¹ Website: http://www.alu.army.mil/alog/issues/sepoct10/coblenz_excellence.html.

² Photographic print, 1919, AMA Collection.

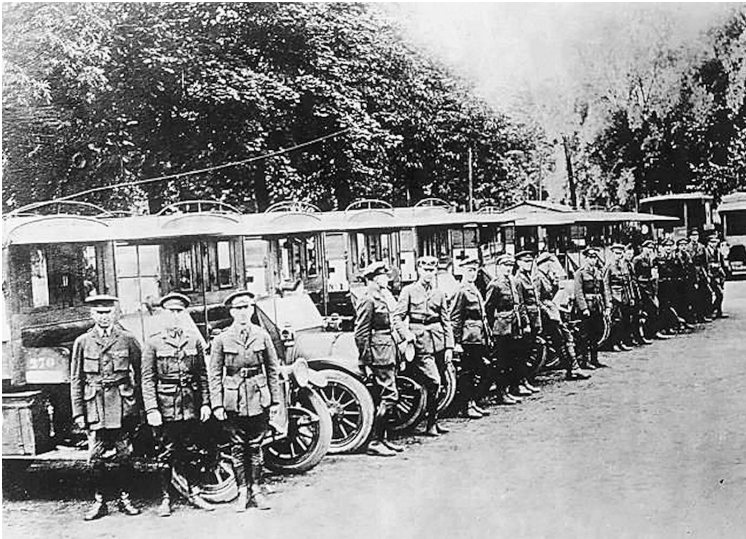
³ Letter of Promotion, U.S. War Department, May, 1917; AMA Collection.

⁴ Letter of Secondment, U.S. War Department, April 17, 1919; AMA Collection.

⁵ Information from two private letters written in 1984 by Ms. Evelyn W. East (spouse).

⁶ Obituary, *Staunton News-Leader*, October 7, 1970.

⁷ Website: https://www.va.gov/opa/publications/factsheets/fs_americas_wars.pdf.



American ambulance drivers outside an American hospital in Europe during WWI.

World War I in Staunton and Augusta County

By Allegra Morrison

The following information was researched and written by Society intern Allegra Morrison, a recent graduate of Bridgewater College. Her work, both the written report and the gathering of artifacts and photographs, was done in preparation for the Society's exhibit "Exceeding Expectations: Staunton and Augusta County during World War I." The exhibit was shown in the History Gallery of the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art from February to May of 2018.

Overview of the WWI Era Shenandoah Valley

The outbreak of the First World War initially had a limited effect on the Shenandoah Valley. The majority of the Valley's citizens viewed the war as a remote event¹ and agreed wholeheartedly with President Woodrow Wilson's plan for Americans to remain neutral in both their thoughts and actions regarding the war. However, in spite of their commitment to Wilson, who had been born in Staunton in 1856, many counties within the Valley, including Augusta, supported the British and their Allies.² These thoughts were undoubtedly influenced by the anti-German sentiment in America during the first years of the war in Europe particularly after Germany's invasion of neutral Belgium and their sinking of the British passenger ship the *Lusitania*.³ The Valley participated in several relief and bond drives throughout the years of 1914, 1915, and 1916 that utilized various organizations and institutions within the Valley including the Augusta branch of the Red Cross, churches, women's clubs, public, and private schools. These drives raised \$25,000 worth of supplies through concerts, canned food collections, and clothing donations that were able to provide aid to people, like the Belgians and the Jews, who were suffering the most during the war.

Valley Wartime Industry and Agriculture

The Valley's agricultural and industrial sectors would ultimately benefit greatly from the war in terms of both commercial and economic successes. Valley farmers, particularly those in Augusta County, saw an increase in the demand for wheat, hay, corn, apples and beef⁴ along with a rise in the prices of county farmland from 1914 to 1917. However a consequence of this rise in demand caused farmers to overextend their produc-



A military preparedness parade in downtown Staunton, circa 1916. (ACHS Collections)

tion to meet domestic⁵ as well as Allied needs.⁶ This, in turn, caused world market prices to suffer as a result. The advent of the war was responsible for propelling the Shenandoah Valley into the motor age⁷ as both farmers and citizens alike purchased machinery like automobiles, trucks, and tractors in addition to installing electricity and telephones in their homes. This rise in motorized transportation led to the improvement of road conditions, which served to increase travel efficiency and further connect cities and towns throughout the Valley. A negative aftereffect was the rise of the cost for purchasing these manufactured goods, whose production cost continued to rise in contrast to that of other production rates such as farming that were falling back to pre-war levels.⁸

Military Preparedness

The years of 1915 and 1916 found Americans placing a higher value on military preparedness. Part of this national theme included the idea of universal military training in schools and colleges,⁹ which led to an overall increase in the number of applicants to military-centered schools throughout America. In the Augusta County area the three most prominent military schools were Augusta Military Academy in Fort Defiance, Fishburne Military School in Waynesboro, and Staunton Military Academy, all of which greatly benefited in terms of their enrollment levels due to the Valley's wholehearted embracing of military preparedness. These

schools were given a further raise in status when the passage of the National Defense Act created the Reserve Officers Training Corps, which led to the instillation of ROTC units at all three schools. The notion of military preparedness was fully supported by Commander Colonel W.J. Perry of the 1st Virginia Regiment who believed that the issue of America's national preparedness could be solved through the National Guard. Perry believed the Guard would serve as the country's first line of defense as it would bring more trained men into its ranks while at the same time drawing communities together due to the economic support from the Guard's militia pay. Perry estimated that with the combined encouragement of the U.S. War Department and the American public the National Guard could easily accommodate a 500,000-man force plus reserves.¹⁰

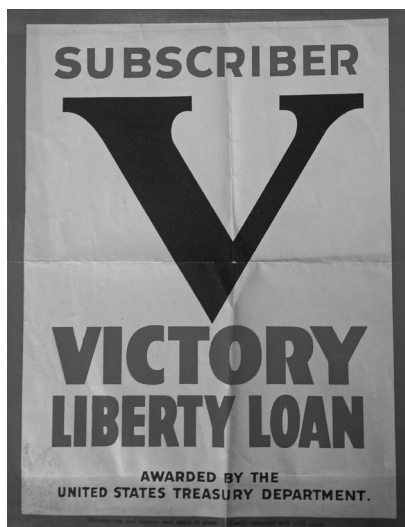
Red Cross and Liberty Loan Drives

The Valley's relief drives of 1914 and 1915 focused exclusively on assisting the Belgians in the wake of Germany's invasion of their country. The plight of the Belgians was seen as so severe that it was deemed necessary by the United States to create the Belgium Relief Commission in 1914. These early drives were headed by the Augusta County chapter of the American Red Cross that collected food, canned goods, and 11,700 pounds of clothes for the Virginia Commission on Belgium Relief.¹¹ As the war progressed, however, other victims of the war, such as the French and Jews of Eastern Europe, became the focus of drives of 1916 and 1917. These later drives raised funds through public concerts held at theaters¹² in addition to rallies that featured speakers from organizations, like the American Jewish Relief Committee, that were held throughout Augusta County.

The Liberty Loan drives also drew upon the best efforts of Valley citizens and organizations. These government bonds essentially let citizens


Crowds pack the street at the intersection of Beverley and Augusta in downtown Staunton at a war bond rally. .





Attention, Boy Scouts!

**GET BUSY
SELLING
LIBERTY LOAN
BONDS—**



To the Boy Scout selling the largest number of bonds during this Third Liberty Loan Campaign, we will give GRATIS, an entire BOY SCOUT UNIFORM, consisting of Coat, Pants, Shirts, Hat, Leggings, and Belt.

To the Boy Scout selling next to the highest number we will give GRATIS a HAVERSACK and HATCHET.

Barth-Weinberg & Co.

Exclusive Agency for Boy Scout Uniforms for Staunton and Augusta County

Victory Liberty Loan Drive poster from a local business (left) and an ad from the newspaper noting that the Staunton business of Barth-Weinberg & Co. offered a complete uniform to the Boy Scout who sold the largest number of bonds during the Third Liberty Loan Campaign.

float a loan to the U.S. Government that would be paid off with interest several years down the road. Many of these loan drives utilized Four Minute Men who would appear on street corners and outside of movie houses to stir up feelings of patriotism and support for the Liberty Loan drives through four-minute speeches. The efforts of the younger members of the Valley community, particularly Boy Scouts, Community Clubs, and Victory Boys and Girls groups, participated in raising funds for the war by selling bonds, growing vegetable gardens, and rolling bandages. The YMCA raised funds for the construction of military training centers throughout the Valley as well as centers constructed overseas in countries such as France.

The Home Guard and Military Service Alternatives

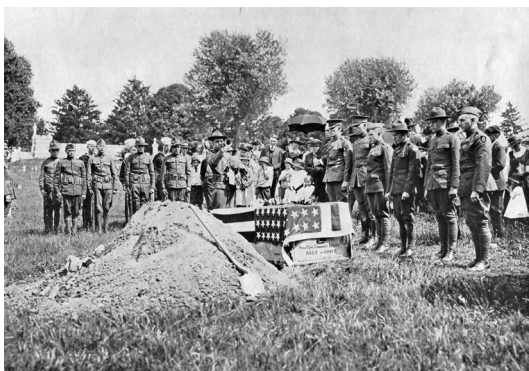
When the United States entered the war in April 1917 a draft was implemented that required all able bodied men from ages eighteen and forty-five to report for training in one of country's branches of military service. In July of the same year Virginia's Governor Henry Stuart instructed the formation of a Home Guard of Virginia Volunteers with the object of taking the place of soldiers going to Europe.¹³ The Valley citizens who surpassed the draft's forty-five-year-old cutoff were able to lend their services to the Augusta County Home Guard, which was formed in 1917 by Captain C.W. Lambert, as a substitute state militia. Initially, the majority of the Guard's

thirty-five members were farmers who mainly lived in or around the city of Staunton along with professional and business men.¹⁴ Members had to use their personal rifles and shotguns until they were provided with government issued arms.¹⁵ In order to bring the Home Guard gunmanship skills on par with that of the American army, Captain Hierome Opie was assigned to instruct all the companies of the 1st Regiment in target practice.¹⁶ Each Home Guard Company was required to have fifty men that contained a captain and two lieutenants with a sergeant for every sixteen men and a corporal for every eight men.¹⁷ However, it was only with the intervention of the county's Confederate veterans that the Home Guard was able to acquire enough members for a full company.

Augusta County alone was responsible for registering 4,450 men for service in the final years of the war, particularly in September 1918. Nevertheless, many men were exempted due to obligations regarding their families or farms. There were also a small handful of individuals who claimed an exemption on the grounds of being a conscientious objector based on their involvement with a traditionally pacifist religious sect such as the Church of the Brethren and the Mennonites. Those with religious exemptions were able to contribute to the war effort through their work as orderlies or farm laborers at Staunton's Western State Hospital. In addition there were many who volunteered overseas for non-military



The 317th Infantry, where many local men served, is shown here in combat in France. (Courtesy 116th Infantry Regiment Foundation)



Nearly sixty local men lost their lives in service to their country during WWI, including Private Maryland Virginia Griffith, from Basic City, killed in action in 1918. His memorial card is seen at right. Private May B. Coffey, whose reburial in Thornrose in 1920, is seen above, was also killed in France. (ACHS Collections)



services during the war including with ambulance units and by going to chaplain school. The Medical Reserve Corps and the Medical Volunteer Service Corps provided an opportunity for Augusta County physicians to volunteer for service in Europe with the Red Cross providing a similar chance for Augusta County women to serve in the war as nurses or ambulance drivers.

Found in the newspapers

Congress's passage of the War Tax Law in October 1914 sought to remove the United States Treasury's deficit that was caused by the war in Europe interfering with America's maritime commerce. The law removed large sums of money from town and county funds throughout the Valley with citizens being required to purchase revenue stamps from their local post offices in order to collect their supplies. Those most heavily affected by the law were post offices, banks, and telephone and insurance companies.¹⁸

Hometown hero, President Woodrow Wilson, made a train stop in Staunton where he was greeted by a large crowd of ecstatic townspeople. Wilson expressed his pleasure in visiting the place of his birth and spoke of his desire to attend the great Staunton Fair that he had seen advertised during his journey. As Wilson continued his travels through Virginia, West Virginia, and Kentucky he was meet with displays of public enthusiasm similar to those in Staunton.¹⁹

Endnotes

¹Richard MacMaster, *Augusta County History, 1865-1950* (Staunton, Va.: Published by the Augusta County Historical Society, 1987), 152.

²Prior to WWI Valley Citizens had strong feelings about Britain's policy against the Boars in South Africa.

³All news of the war was received in the U.S. via British censors, therefore Valley newspapers and theaters conveyed a pro Allies bias to its citizens.

⁴MacMaster, 151. The previous records for wheat, corn, and hay were surpassed in 1917 and 1918 by farmers in Augusta County who received record prices for these crops.

⁵The Food Administration discouraged hoarding and profiteering of the state and local level through appropriate penalties and promoting conservative education campaigns that proposed wheat alternatives like potatoes.

⁶MacMaster, 151.

⁷Ibid.

⁸The Fuel Administration made regulations that conserved gas and coal through initiatives like gasless Sundays.

⁹MacMaster, 152.

¹⁰*Staunton Daily News* 21 April 1916.

¹¹Alexander S. Robertson was chosen as the local representative of the Virginia Commission In December 1914.

¹²Several of these concerts were held at the New Theater in Staunton and consisted of amateur performances as well as concerts performed by the Stonewall Brigade Band.

¹³*Staunton Daily News* 31 July 1917.

¹⁴MacMaster, 159.

¹⁵*Staunton Daily News* 31 July 1917.

¹⁶*Staunton Daily News* 27 March 1917.

¹⁷*Staunton Daily News* 31 July 1917.

¹⁸*Staunton Daily News* 1 December 1914.

¹⁹*Staunton Daily News* 6 December 1916.



Newspaper headlines on November 12, 1918, the day after Armistice Day when World War I ended.

Montgomery Hall: A Plantation and a Park

The National Register Nomination

Commissioned by the city of Staunton

The following essay is the text from the National Register Nomination submitted by Frazier & Associates to the Virginia Department of Historic Resources for inclusion of the park on the National Register of Historic Places. The nomination was commissioned by the city of Staunton. Research and writing for the various sections of the nomination were completed by the following people: archaeological by Dennis Blanton, architectural by William T. Frazier and Victoria Leonard, and historical by Nancy Sorrells.

Montgomery Hall Park is in the southwest section of the city of Staunton in the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia. The city purchased the 148-acre facility in 1946 as a park for the local African-American community and it remained in that capacity until 1969 when it was integrated into the rest of the city park system. Playgrounds, a swimming pool and other recreational features were added to the grounds in the late 1940s around Montgomery Hall, the house that remained on the site. It is a large two-story brick residence designed in the Colonial Revival style by local noted architect, T.J. Collins in 1907 after a fire largely destroyed the existing house. That original dwelling was constructed in 1822-24 by a prominent political and legal statesman, John Howe Peyton for his new bride, Ann Montgomery Lewis. The present house (built on the foundation of the original) largely retains its exterior design with the exception of the removal of side wrap-around porches and the porte-cochere in a 1978 conversion to the City of Staunton Parks and Recreation Department offices. The first floor of the interior was heavily remodeled during that conversion, but the second floor was largely left intact. The dining room's original features also were retained when the space was converted into a conference room. The house retains much of its integrity with the exception of parts of the first floor. The site retains some of its integrity from its conversion to a park in 1946 although many new park amenities have been added in more recent years

Site

The 148-acre site is located within the southwestern portion of

Staunton's city limits and is bound by Montgomery Avenue and residences to the southeast, the CSX Railroad to the north, residential areas, open space and woodlands to the west, and farmland to the southwest. The main entrance is located at the northeastern corner of the property along Montgomery Avenue and the entry road leads up the hill to Montgomery Hall. The historic house is surrounded by well-kept lawns, a mix of mature deciduous and coniferous trees and other vegetation, several parking lots and several other recreational facilities. These include playgrounds, the swimming pool complex, as well as basketball and tennis courts and several playing fields.

A circa 1913 brochure describes the lawn around the house as follows: "The lawn surrounding the house, consists of ten to fifteen acres and extends to the macadam highway, with wide driveways winding through groves of fine trees. This beautiful lawn which is terraced on the east, is carpeted with a heavy bluegrass sod, the native grass of this section. To the south of the lawn is a large terraced garden which furnishes vegetables for family use."

Continuing past the present facilities, a branch of the road exits back to Montgomery Avenue while the park road continues winding southward up a hill to additional facilities. Just south of the entrance is an additional softball field and most of the golf course fairways and greens. Completely separate in the southeast corner of the property, at the top of a hill, is



EAST VIEW OF MANSION

Montgomery Hall as seen in the sales booklet. (ACHS archives)

the soccer complex with additional parking and a shelter with restroom facilities. An additional playground, three picnic shelters, restrooms, trail entrances, and additional parking are located at the termination of this road. There are five park trails that are all concentrated in the woodland areas along the western half of the park.

Contributing buildings to the historic register nomination include Montgomery Hall (the Irene Givens Administration Building), the bathhouse and the pool equipment shed. Contributing sites include the springhouse foundation, barn foundation, and the horseshoe pit. There is one contributing structure, the swimming pool. Additional site features that are noncontributing include two playgrounds, three softball fields, basketball courts, tennis courts, a soccer complex and the Kiwanis Disc Golf Course. Noncontributing buildings include the soccer shelter, three picnic shelters, two restroom buildings, and a softball concession shed. Noncontributing structures include a storage garage and a pool storage shed.

Historical Significance Statement:

This site is eligible for the NRHP at the state level under Criterion A both for the contributions to the nation's early Republic history during John Howe Peyton's lifetime and for the park's contributions to African-American community and culture within the state of Virginia during its existence from 1946-1969 as an African-American park, operated independently under the auspices of an African-American committee.

CRITERION A: Montgomery Hall would have been one of the places in the new Republic where ideas about the course of the new nation were discussed at length. As one of America's most prominent local, state, and national early Republic leaders, John Howe Peyton's social and political circles included U.S. Presidents Thomas Jefferson and James Madison and U.S. statesman Henry Clay, all of whom stayed at Montgomery Hall and engaged in political discourse with Peyton. Certainly many ideas hatched within the walls of Peyton's home were later found in the legislative and political documents of the new America.

Perhaps the most significant period of Montgomery Hall, however, came a century later with the creation of Montgomery Hall Park as a place for the recreational needs of the African-American community in the Jim Crow South. It became far more than simply a place to be outside. This place, operated with almost no interference from the city leaders, became intertwined into the black community of Staunton and Augusta County. Together with nearby Booker T. Washington School, and the area churches,

the park became one leg of the three-legged stool upon which the African-American community rested.

Facts that should not be lost in this story are the close ties between the African-American park and the church community. The leaders of the park committee were ministers at local churches and those churches as well as dozens of other African-American churches throughout the state used the park for social and spiritual renewal. Summer vesper services were held weekly at the park and at least one church conducted its vacation bible school at the park. "Socially Montgomery Hall Park was for the black community what the church was before the park. Once the park was established it became the center of the community," remembered Helen Becks who served as the park's committee secretary for almost the entire period of the park's segregated existence.¹

The park's significance stretched across the state as is evidenced by summer visitation numbers that reached past 18,000 and the fact that groups from African-American communities across Virginia came to Montgomery Hall Park. The segregated park was one of only a handful within Virginia during the Jim Crow period and therefore had a reputation that extended throughout the Commonwealth. Further, the park contained the only African-American bowling alley in the state. As a segregated African-American park, Montgomery Hall was not alone in the Old Dominion, but it was unique in its size and the quality of its amenities and in the fact that it was operated by African Americans with virtually no interference from the white community and officials. For instance, Montgomery Hall Park was 150 acres. By contrast, the 9.5-acre Washington Park in Charlottesville had no pool, bowling alley, or camping space, and very limited picnic facilities. It did have an athletic field, a wooden gymnasium referred to as a barn, a wading pool, two clay tennis courts, and some playground equipment by 1954 but all of that on less than ten acres.

Other facilities in the state included the token state park, Prince Edward Lake, which was opened in 1950 beside the whites-only Goodwin Lake. Today the two are combined as Twin Lakes State Park. In Shenandoah National Park, there was the Lewis Mountain Negro area for camping. And Buckroe Beach had a segregated resort area called Bayshore Beach for African Americans. One of two other segregated parks remembered by Staunton African-Americans was Green Pastures Recreation Area, located in the U.S. National Forest near Clifton Forge. Opened in 1940 and supported by the local NAACP, became Longdale Recreation Area in 1963.

Happyland Lake in Lynchburg was a private reservoir open to the black population for swimming, boating, and fishing. The facility also had a dance hall, bar, and restaurant.

CRITERION C This site is also eligible for the NRHP because it represents significant state-wide examples of the following:

A prosperous Shenandoah Valley wheat farm during the nineteenth century when the Valley of Virginia led the nation in wheat production and exported grain around the world.

A representative case study of the system of agricultural slavery as it existed in the Shenandoah Valley in a grain economy before the Civil War.

One of the only examples of a park operated by and for African Americans in the Jim Crow South in Virginia. The park is intertwined with the culture of Booker T. Washington School, already on the NRHP, and with the spiritual life of the African-American community in Staunton and Augusta County.

CRITERION D Further, this site is eligible for the NRHP because it represents significant opportunity to learn about and remember the significance of the African-American community in the 1940s to the 1960s within Virginia and within the wider Jim Crow South. The banner on the MHP letterhead read as follows: Montgomery Hall Park “Beauty-Healthful Recreation.” The amazing story of how the African-American community leaders came together to create such a powerful place of recreation, education, community, and spiritual renewal in spite of the obstacles put into place in the Jim Crow South is a story worth documenting and remembering.

The creation of Montgomery Hall Plantation

When thirty-year-old John Howe Peyton, a Princeton-educated lawyer from Stafford County, Va., moved to Staunton to connect with some of America’s most prominent political and legal statesmen, he was positioning himself at the top tier of Virginia’s society. In 1821, upon his marriage to Ann Montgomery Lewis of Sweet Springs, two of Virginia’s more prominent families were joined. Peyton’s family went back to seventeenth-century Tidewater plantation owners, and Lewis’s family went directly back to the patriarch John Lewis, considered among the earliest and most important settlers in Augusta County when it was the western frontier of American settlement.²

America’s leaders visited Montgomery Hall

The marriage was the second for Peyton, his first wife having died in 1820, leaving him with one child. Peyton’s new marriage prompted him

to provide an appropriate living arrangement for his bride and he began building an expansive residence on his property of several hundred acres to the west of Staunton that he had purchased in 1810. More than likely he and his first wife had already been living on the property in an older dwelling. It took two years, from 1822-1824, to build Montgomery Hall. The home was based upon plans, according to an unsubstantiated family story, provided by Thomas Jefferson. Whether or not Jefferson was involved in the design of the mansion that came to be called Montgomery Hall (after Ann Peyton's middle name), Peyton was acquainted with the third President as well as President James Madison and other leaders of the new Republic, many of whom were entertained at the spacious mansion. There, undoubtedly, deep political discussions in regard to the development of the young United States took place. Peyton's son, John Lewis Peyton, wrote about his father's circle of acquaintances that they were "among the most distinguished for talents and acquirements, for rank and station in the State and Country."³

Peyton lived a full and active public life, making a difference on the local, state, and national level. In 1808 he moved to the Staunton area, one of the most important cities west of the Blue Ridge. Staunton was the seat of the superior courts for all of western Virginia, which at that time contained all of present-day West Virginia. There he rose to the top of the legal profession with one of his biographers noting: "He met in contest the strongest men in each department of the law and he made himself a champion in all." A contemporary, Daniel Sheffey, noted "He possessed gigantic power without effort, was leader in his circuit and at the head of the profession."⁴

As a lawyer he served as Augusta County's Commonwealth Attorney for thirty-two years. Contemporary accounts praise his courtroom skills where he was a distinguished criminal lawyer. Some contemporaries called him the "greatest lawyer west of the Blue Ridge." His written and oratory work from the bar was recognized as superior.⁵

There were two instances of Peyton's absence from the bar – while serving in the military and while serving in the Virginia legislature. In 1802-03 he joined a volunteer cavalry company and was commissioned captain. Later, during the War of 1812, he served as chief of staff to General Porterfield from 1812-1815. Twice he served in Virginia's legislature, once as a young man and once late in life. However, though he followed state and national politics with a passion, his love was in the legal profession, practicing law. As such he turned down judgeships in order to continue as

a prosecutor. In 1806 he was elected to the House of Delegates representing Stafford County and served for several years until moving to Staunton. Many years later he spent five years, 1839-1845, in the Virginia Senate representing Augusta and Rockbridge Counties. He also served as Mayor of Staunton in 1816 and 1817.⁶

Education was important to him, and his biographer noted that "He regarded education or intellectual progress as the sure forerunner of moral improvement." In an effort to improve the young men and women of the upper Shenandoah Valley, he served diligently on the following institutional boards: Washington College (now Washington and Lee), the Staunton Academy, and the Virginia Female Institute (now Stuart Hall). He played an important role in the founding of both the Virginia Military Institute (VMI) and the Virginia Female Institute. He was very involved in the promotion of VMI and advocated the combination of Washington College and VMI as one university in Lexington. Nationally, he accepted the position of "visitor" to the U.S. Military Academy at West Point and penned one of the most highly regarded strategic plans for that institution at that time.⁷

His work in society went far beyond the educational and legal institutions of the day. "It may not be out of place to mention here that his interest in, and sympathy for the unfortunate and afflicted was manifested in various ways, but especially by his services as a member of the Court of Directors of the Western Lunatic Asylum (now Western State Hospital and also on the NRHP)," noted one of his biographers. He served on that board for twenty years and was president for ten of those years.⁸

A wheat plantation and an African-American community

Although a lawyer and a statesman who served in the Virginia legislature, Peyton made his living as a farmer. As such Montgomery Hall was a working plantation with wheat as the cash crop, but with diversified production that included a number of crops, orchards, and livestock. In order to run such an agricultural enterprise, Peyton relied upon the labor of approximately fifty African-American slaves, making him one of the largest slave owners in Augusta County. In the Shenandoah Valley, unlike single crop plantations of Tidewater Virginia, African-Americans worked side-by-side with members of white society, even landed gentry such as the Peytons. The system of bondage that developed in the Upper Valley was different, although no less brutal, than other parts of the South. The family of both black and white individuals that evolved at Montgomery Hall provides an excellent example of the type of slave society that existed

in the Shenandoah Valley during the first half of the nineteenth century. Thus the story during the Peyton era is two-tiered: that of an influential statesman and prosperous agriculturalist and his family and that of the African-American community upon which the success of Montgomery Hall rested.

An architectural story

The architectural story that is interwoven into the social history is both grand, as in the mansion house and the mother-in-law's cottage that was built a few years after the main house, and vernacular – the slave quarters, the barns, springhouse, smokehouse, and other utilitarian buildings necessary in a successful farm operation. The architectural story took an interesting twist in the first years of the twentieth century with the involvement of famed Staunton architect T.J. Collins.

Peyton's death

Peyton died in 1847 and, while the family continued to be prominent in the Staunton area, they soon left Montgomery Hall. Perhaps the most important person among Peyton's children who had been born and raised at Montgomery Hall was son John Lewis Peyton who died at nearby Steephill in 1896 in his late seventies. He is best known as the historian for Augusta County and wrote what is still today considered the definitive history of Augusta. A lawyer like his father, he served the U.S. in the diplomatic service to France. During the Civil War he represented the Confederate government in England.⁹

Representative of Valley agriculture

At the time of Peyton's death, the Montgomery Hall holdings consisted of over 800 acres. By 1850, however, the mansion house and 300 acres had been sold to William J. Shumate. Over the next several years, the rest of the acreage was sold off. From 1850 until World War II, the estate went through a series of above-average landed gentry owners, all of whom had family connections in the area. The farm became a showcase of Shenandoah Valley agriculture and was still used for fine entertainment among the well-heeled members of society, but the prestige and statesmanship of the Peytons was never replicated.

The first owner after Peyton was William J. Shumate who owned Montgomery Hall from 1850 to 1871 when the farm was sold at public auction.¹⁰ One important event that changed the farm was the coming of the railroad in the 1850s. What eventually became the C&O railroad passed through a portion of the farm and made it much easier to get agricultural produce to market, receive goods, and enabled travel.

In 1871 Montgomery Hall was sold under court order. Its worth as a fine piece of agricultural land is spelled out in the newspaper advertisement:

...that very desirable farm known as MONTGOMERY HALL, containing about 150 acres, and located immediately on the Chesapeake & Ohio Railroad in the county of Augusta, one mile West of the City of Staunton. The land is fine limestone, well adapted to grass, and all the cereals...about 40 acres of this land are in *orchards* of select fruits." The advertisement goes on to describe the mansion house and "a large Swisher barn. [bank barn]"¹¹

African-American community

It was under Shumate's ownership that the Civil War occurred. There are stories of Confederate soldiers being encamped at the farm. More importantly, however, is the evolution of the African-American community at Montgomery Hall that occurred as a result of the war. For the first fifteen years of his Montgomery Hall ownership, Shumate would have relied on slave labor to operate his farm. After the war, many of the freed families apparently remained in the vicinity. The creek at the farm was apparently a spot where baptisms took place during religious services within the black community.¹²

More turnover

William W. Donaghe purchased Montgomery Hall and 150 acres in 1871. Donaghe was related to the Peytons and other founders of Augusta County. He lived just two years after purchasing the farm and Henry



RECEPTION HALL

The Reception Hall of Montgomery Hall as seen in the sales booklet. (ACHS archives)

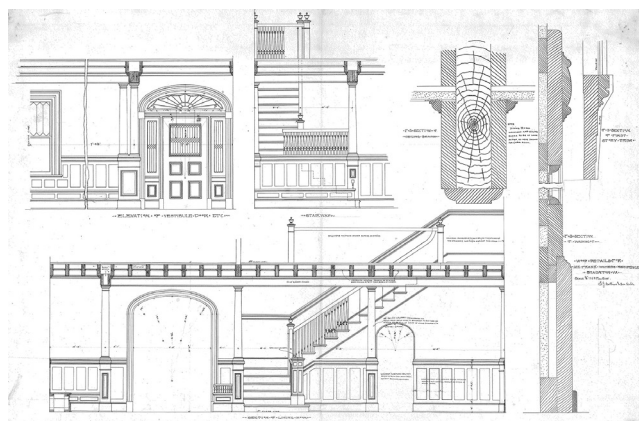
Dwight Peck acquired the farm from Donaghe's estate. Peck continued to operate a thriving farm operation and advertised his fine livestock regularly in the Staunton newspapers. He also upgraded the mansion house, adding central heat and plumbing. The estate continued to be a showcase with grand entertainments and elaborate weddings that made the society columns of the local newspaper. To illustrate that statement, one has to look no further than the real estate sales flyer for the house that was printed about 1913, when the house was put up for sale by owner Bates Warren. It noted that Montgomery Hall had been "for a number of years, the home of cultured, refined and wealthy people, who exercised the best judgment and taste in the improvement of the property."¹³

Enter T.J. Collins, architect

In 1902, Peck sold the property to Emma and Frank Walter who traveled in the circles of high society. The Walters reconstituted some of the earlier tracts of land for Montgomery Hall and hired famed architect T.J. Collins to design an addition and renovate the eighty-year-old mansion



Elevation drawings of Montgomery Hall done by T.J. Collins in 1906. (Courtesy Historic Staunton Foundation)



Interior details of Montgomery Hall done by T.J. Collins. (Courtesy Historic Staunton Foundation)

house. Collins began making drawings of the house when tragedy struck. According to the local newspapers, the house was completely consumed by fire on February 11, 1906. The article went on to describe the home as “one of the finest suburban homes” in the area and estimated the damage to have been about \$20,000.¹⁴

Fortunately, the house was well insured and the Walters rented a home in Staunton while Collins designed a replacement house built over the remains of the original structure. The new mansion was completed a year later in 1907. Because Collins did drawings before the fire, interesting comparisons can be made between the original house and the new Montgomery Hall.¹⁵

A series of owners

In 1911, the Walters sold the Montgomery Hall tract to Bates Warren of Washington, D.C., who only used the home as a summer retreat. Two years later he sold the property to J.S. Kennedy, “Augusta County’s well-known breeder of fine horses,” (according to the Staunton reports sent to the Richmond newspaper) for \$100,000.¹⁶ The property was then sold to Davitt Chidester in 1927 and in 1932 Alexander Thomas purchased the property. During the Thomas years a dairy operated on the property.¹⁷

An African-American haven

Until the Civil Rights era of the 1960s, African Americans in the Jim Crow South lived under the harsh social and legal laws that created a separate and very unequal society. That was as true for African Americans in Staunton and Augusta County as it was anywhere else. However, in 1947,

thanks to the perseverance and leadership of Staunton's African-American community, a small beacon of light was created in the form of Montgomery Hall Park.

Staunton and Augusta County's white residents had enjoyed Gypsy Hill Park well before the twentieth century. By WWII the park had a swimming pool, golf course, a bandstand, and picnic areas. Black residents, however, were only allowed to visit the park one day each year. After they used the pool, the water was drained from it and it was closed for the season. Rather than submit to such humiliating rules, many area African Americans refused to step foot on the grounds of Gypsy Hill. However, shortly after World War II, leaders in the black community began asking for more use of Gypsy Hill. The Staunton City Council minutes recorded in January of 1946 the fact that Dr. C.J. Waller as well as other members of "several colored organizations" began pushing to have the opportunity to visit Gypsy Hill Park on certain days *every* week. This was not an option that the city council approved of, however, the governing body did listen when African-American leaders like the Rev. T.J. Jemison of Mount Zion Baptist Church suggested the city give his community a park of their own.¹⁸

That was an option the city elders might be able to support. In June of 1946, the city purchased 150 acres and the mansion house known as Montgomery Hall from A.C. Thomas and his wife for \$42,500. The city then turned the park over to the African-American community and put the Rev. Jemison in charge of the Negro Recreation Committee. George Taylor was his assistant. For the next two decades, the park was embraced by the African-American community, not just from Staunton, Augusta County, and Waynesboro, but from across the state. It became a haven of recreation, fun, social gatherings, spiritual gatherings, and educational classes for all ages. To its credit, Staunton's City Council gave the community full control for the operation and maintenance of the park under the control of the park committee. The committee set the rules of the park, established programs, hired employees, oversaw repairs and improvements, and created budgets. Although the city gave the park a limited budget, money for most improvements, equipment, and other extras came from admission fees, concession stand sales, and other fundraising activities. The park committee met regularly with city management and, on occasion, city council expanded its coffers when additional needs arose above the allotted budget.¹⁹

From the very beginning the private community, both black and white, helped make the park a success. Initial gifts to the park during its opening

season came from twenty-six different individuals and businesses and included, in addition to cash, dishes, card tables, paint, chairs, a painting, a flower vase, records, curtains, smoking stands, magazines, books, and a piano.²⁰

An African-American park opens

The formal dedication of the new “recreation center” as the Staunton newspaper called Montgomery Hall Park, took place on July 4, 1947. The autonomous recreation committee had already been in place for many months preparing for the grand opening. According to the newspaper, 1,500 persons attended the opening ceremonies including folks from seven other states and “many white friends.” The park formally opened its gates at 10 a.m. with fun and games taking place throughout the day. Activities included volleyball, ping-pong, croquet, horseshoes, bowling, and softball. An afternoon matinee was held with an admission charge of thirty-five cents. At 8 p.m. that evening, Staunton Mayor William A. Grubert officially turned the park over to the “Negro Committee,” in a short ceremony and reception. In introducing Mayor Grubert, the vice-chairman of the Negro Recreation Committee, George Taylor, told the crowd that the park was a “dream realized.” He urged everyone to “show the highest appreciation and the highest order of conduct, so we can maintain the place the way it should be kept.”

Mayor Grubert’s remarks included this:

I deeply appreciate the privilege of participating in these dedication ceremonies. All those who have the welfare of the community at heart rejoice at the acquisition of this property and its consecration as a recreational center. We see today the fruition of many years of untiring efforts on the part of the City Council to purchase a property of a size adequate for a recreational center for the Negro population of our City. The present site was selected, not only because it is located near the majority of our colored population, but also because it offers excellent possibilities for future development.

We must realize, of course, that development of this property cannot be accomplished within a day. But it will be the policy of the Council to speed this development by making a substantial annual appropriation which – within a few years with your help – will enable us to improve the building and grounds to such an extent that you will have a recreational center, which not only you, but the entire community will be proud of.

The day concluded with a dance. The newspaper described the importance of the event as follows:

Formal acceptance of the installation by the Negro population will culminate a project which began when the city purchased the property from A.C. Thomas for use as a Negro recreation area. A series of conferences between a City Council committee and a committee of Negro citizens resulted in a plan for the area’s maintenance. A caretaker was installed

in the large building which will serve as a recreation center, the turf was graded and sodded, and the building made ready for use.

In his dedication speech, Mayor Grubert explained that the city council selected the Negro Recreation Committee from many names that were submitted of people willing to devote time and effort to make the park a success. Grubert also noted that he had asked the Rev. Mr. Jemison's committee to select a name for the park. The newly-appointed committee chose Montgomery Hall Park.

Jemison, in accepting the park for the community, told the crowd: "Now our children have a place to play; our adults have a place to enjoy their evenings in beauty and splendor. And the beauty of it is—it's yours." After the purchase, the city placed the operations of the park in the hands of the black community. From that point, the committee ran the park with very little support or but almost no interference from the city. That meant raising money for capital projects as well as daily operations. The committee took its job seriously and recorded everything it did in a notebook. From 1947 until the fall of 1969 when integration brought the park into the mainstream of the city system, details of the park's history were faithfully recorded in that book. Today that worn notebook represents the only written history of Montgomery Hall Park during its period as an African-American park. It is preserved in the archives of the Augusta County Historical Society.²¹

More than just a park

For the African-American community, MHP was more than just a recreational area. For black families in the Staunton area, the foundation of their community had three interconnected parts: Booker T. Washington School, the area African-American churches, and Montgomery Hall Park. They were interconnected and complementary of each other and together they comprised the heart and soul of the community. It was recognized from the very beginning that the school, the churches, and the park complemented one another.

For its part the park committee often consulted with the school's schedule before setting up its own events such as athletic tournaments or dances. In October of 1947 the park committee wanted to establish Friday night recreational activities, for instance, but hesitated to move forward until the high school had been consulted. A decade later, as the park grew and expanded, the park committee approached the city manager and the school board about hiring an athletic director for the school who would work at the park in the summer months. That position eventually was created.

The school often looked to the park to expand its activities. For

Scenes from Montgomery Hall Park, c. 1940s and 1950s



A DuPont employee picnic (top), a scene from one of the many dances held inside the mansion house (left), and children on the playground.





*At the swimming pool (top),
on a slide in front of the man-
sion house (middle), and pals
hanging out at the park..*



instance, the high school never had a football team, but students from the school began to organize at the park after school to form a competitive team. They were given space at the park to store their athletic equipment. During the summer the school majorettes used the park to practice. In the fall of 1956, high school principal A.R. Ware wrote a letter to the park committee requesting use of the mansion house for the band. He noted that his band teacher needed a place where he could teach band, give individual instruction, and rehearse the entire band from 12:30 until 4:30 each day. Further he inquired as to the possibility of the band storing instruments during the school year. The committee agreed to host the band and found space for the instruments.

Area churches as well as those from outside of the area were regulars at the park. The park had not even been open a month when three church groups from outside the area paid ten dollars each to spend a day at the park. Two Baptist churches in the area, Ebenezer and Mt. Zion, held weekly vesper services in the park every summer in July and August. Church picnics as well as Easter sunrise services were staples of the spiritual life of the park. Mt. Zion also held its vacation bible school at the park.²²

Visitors from near and far

It didn't take long for the reputation of Montgomery Hall to spread across the state. It was not unusual for several dozen buses from the Valley of Virginia down to Roanoke and Clifton Forge and even east of the mountains from the Charlottesville and Lynchburg area to make the day-long visit to Staunton. In some cases groups camped overnight at the park. In a summer season that lasted from the beginning of June until Labor Day, visitation often topped 18,000.

Among the examples of groups from outside the area are the following: in 1953 the Baptist Bible School Union of Charlottesville arrived for its annual picnic. In that same year the First Baptist Church of Clifton Forge also planned to visit the park for an annual picnic. In 1965 the Extension Agent from Amherst County sent a note to the park committee thanking them for the hospitality shown toward the three hundred 4-Hers who had come to the park for a picnic. Throughout the years, a number of different groups from Rockbridge County were regular visitors to the park as well.

Many local organizations were allowed to meet in the mansion house or the bowling alley building. The VFW was given permanent space within the building over top of the bowling alley. The Girl Scouts were also provided with their own meeting space. The girls hosted a benefit social at the

park so that they could equip their meeting room. Both the Boy Scouts and the Girl Scouts had troops that met at the park, but the park was also used as a gathering place for African-American Scouts from across the region.

The Girl Scouts in particular were active at the park, hosting many socials and even a dance in which they crowned one young lady as Miss Girl Scout. For many years there was a two-week camp for girls that was held at the park. In May of 1958 the field director of the Augusta-Rockingham Girl Scouts wrote the park committee requesting permission to once again operate their day camp "for colored Girl Scouts" from June 16-20 from 9 a.m. to 3 p.m. each day. They wanted to continue the arrangement of allowing the girls to use the pool each day for ten cents per girl.²³

The Mt. Zion Baptist Church Boy Scout Troop No. 56 spent a lot of time at the park. Former members recall camping out, hiking, and grilling hamburgers at the park. Jimmy Becks, a member of the MHP committee, was also the Boy Scout Troop leader for many years. He remembers bringing the Scouts to the park for overnight or weekend camping expeditions. "We would camp anywhere that we could put a tent, but most of the time by the bowling alley," he recalled.²⁴

Bowling Alley

Despite the efforts of the committee and the city, Montgomery Hall Park was never as large or as grand as Gypsy Hill Park. However it did have several amenities that were absent at Gypsy Hill. The white park had, for instance, a large building, but it did not approach the size and grandeur of the mansion at Montgomery Hall Park. And Gypsy Hill Park did not have a bowling alley! Although small, the bowling alley was a source of fun and pride for the community. It was a holdover from the days of grandeur as a mansion house for the elite of Staunton. However the recreation committee poured its heart and soul into fixing up the building, learning about the sport, and operating a profitable enterprise. The committee talked of making the bowling alley "a real center of activity" and of the desire to form teams to challenge teams from other towns.

By the late 1950s the operation of the bowling alley had been placed in the hands of Dr. John Chiles who turned the bowling into a thriving part of the park activities. He even attended out-of-town training about the operation of the business. Dr. Chiles proudly reported to the park committee that the MHP bowling alley was the only "Negro owned alley in the state." Unlike many of the park facilities that were only open in the summer months, the bowling alley eventually operated year round.²⁵

Swimming pool

In the first seasons of the park, there was one glaring difference between the white park in Staunton and the black park—a swimming pool. Before Montgomery Hall Park, African-Americans were allowed to use Gypsy Hill Park and its pool one day a year. Therefore, most area members of the black community who knew how to swim recalled learning in area creeks and rivers or by going to one of the other black parks in the state. Almost from opening day at Montgomery Hall, the recreation committee began weighing options, including obtaining a bank loan, in order to rectify the situation. Then Elizabeth Catlett, a member of a prominent white family in Staunton, died and left \$10,000 for the “benefit of the colored people of Staunton.” Catlett’s sister and executor, Amy Catlett, decided to use the money to build a pool at Montgomery Hall Park. A very appreciative park committee set about getting bids in June of 1948.

The pool was complete sometime in July of 1949. Before the summer was out, a pool dedication was held in a ceremony that included Mayor Grubert. The addition of the pool increased the park visitation and increased the work load of the staff. A lifeguard and swim instructor were hired and bath houses were created in the building above the bowling alley. To swim, adults paid twenty-five cents a day and children paid twenty cents.²⁶

Eugenia Becks Taylor was a lifeguard at the pool for about a decade. Shortly after her eighteenth birthday the athletic young lady who played high school sports and majored in physical education in college, was sent for a two-week training course by the American Red Cross down to the A&I State College in Nashville, Tennessee. There at the African-American college she attended National Aquatic School and earned her water safety and life-saving certificate. For ten years, even after marrying and moving out of state, Mrs. Taylor returned home to Staunton for the summer and worked at the park. To say the pool was popular is an understatement. “Sometimes we were like sardines,” she said. Although she only ever had to rescue one man who tired in the deep end of the pool, she admitted to having to rescue “a lot of swimming trunks” that were made of a slippery material that sometimes came right off when a boy dove off the diving board.

In addition to lifeguard duties, Mrs. Taylor taught swimming classes every morning Monday through Friday. “We had beginners class in the morning followed by intermediate. Classes were over by twelve o’clock.” On her own in the evening she taught several elderly women who had expressed a desire to learn how to swim.

She also had to test the pH of the water every day and teach the Girl Scouts who had summer camp at Montgomery Hall. One some days she helped with the other activities such as horseshoes and croquet.²⁷

Constant improvements

Maintenance, upgrades, and improvements were always a topic to address at the park committee's regular meetings. The landscape was constantly being paved, graded, and improved upon as the committee continued to expand recreational opportunities. Picnic tables and park benches were added as was playground equipment including large and small slides, swings, merry-go-rounds and see-saws. Ballfields were graded, backstops erected, rock blasted, and dugouts constructed. Parking areas for cars and sidewalks for people were carved out of the old dairy farm. Barbeque pits and a camping area were created.

By the summer of 1948, two tennis courts had been added to the park. Maintaining the courts and putting the lines on them every few days became part of the live-in park caretaker's responsibility. A few years later, in 1956, outdoor basketball courts were added to the facilities.

Some of the work was far less glamorous such as laying down sod, mowing the grass, putting fences around playing fields, and laying water and sewer lines. No task, no matter how small or large, got past the park committee.²⁸

Not only did the landscape undergo a drastic transformation from dairy farm to community park under the African-American park committee, but the mansion house had to undergo change from private living space to public recreational space. Part of the mansion remained as living space for a caretaker's family. The first family to live at Montgomery Hall as caretakers were the Johnstons. They had been living in the country as caretakers on a country estate and were ecstatic to come to a place in the city with modern indoor plumbing and radiator heat. The Johnston children also reveled in the fact that they had something to do and someone to play with every day, unlike their more isolated life in the country. One of the harder jobs for John Johnston to carry out was the cleaning of the pool. To accomplish this task, the pool had to be drained and then Johnston had to get down in the pool with a big bucket of soapy water and with a big brush he had to scrub the pool floor and walls from top to bottom. When he was finished, it took two days to fill the pool back up again.²⁹

Much of the mansion house was transformed into a recreation center. In addition to special rooms for the Girl Scouts and the VFW, women's

clubs like the Matron's Progressive Club and the Sunshine Circle furnished their own rooms. In addition there was an expanded kitchen, a first aid room, a game room, a library (with 1,800 books), and a dance hall. The front stairway and a wall partition were removed in order to better accommodate people when events were held. In 1956, the committee received the endorsement of the Housekeepers Sunshine Club for the enlarging of the social hall because it would "be the means of taking care of larger crowds and thereby making more money for doing repairs." In 1959, the committee made plans to approach city council about renovating the downstairs of the mansion house.³⁰

Running the park

The MHP Recreation Committee ran the park. This group created the rules, enforced the rules, planned activities, created a schedule of work duties for employees, approved or denied applications for park use, and were the liaison between the African-American community and city government. Decisions about coal for heating and toilet paper for the restrooms were among those items on their monthly agenda.

The group also acted as the personnel office for any park employees. At the heyday of its operation in the early 1960s, the park had seven or eight employees, most of which were part-time. There was usually a caretaker who lived on the grounds as well. In 1962 the other employees were Mrs. Irene Givens, playground supervisor; Mrs. Catherine Jones, assistant; Earl Brown, athletic director; Mrs. Norma Brooks, ticket seller; Miss Bernice Robinson, check room; Ronald Bagley, lifeguard; and Miss Ella Rica Moats, Red Cross swim instructor.³¹

Helen and Jimmy Becks were an integral part of the committee that ran the park. He was a member of the committee and she was paid fifteen dollars a month to act as secretary for the group at its monthly meeting. Both recalled that the city provided only the bare minimum in terms of financial assistance to the park, thus putting those running the park in the position of constantly fund raising. "The committee could only get so much from the city," he recalled. "For instance, we asked for new trash cans. The city bought new trash cans and put them in Gypsy Hill Park. They brought the old cans with 'GHP' marked on them for us to have."³²

Dances

Dancing was probably the most popular use of the mansion house. Every group, young and old, held dances at the park. Some dances were sponsored by the park itself – community Halloween and Thanksgiving

dances for instance. Others were sponsored by specific groups such as the African-American VFW group that had space at the park, or the Daughters of Ethiopia. Live bands were often hired for the dances, but the park also had a jukebox and played records.

Of all the activities held over the years at the park, the dances rank at the top of the memories. In those days the mansion had a wrap-around porch and a lot of young folks remember walking on the porch and holding hands. Inside was another story. There the park supervisor Irene "Mom" Givens kept a sharp eye on the teenagers at the dance, monitoring behavior and making sure no one was getting too close. "She'd come right up to you and put her hand right between you," remembered Williner Crawford. Mom Givens, for whom the park building is now named, was remembered for her saying at the dances: "Let me see some light."

"It would blow your mind thinking about how many people could get in the building for the dances. There were chairs around the wall, but everyone else was standing or dancing," remembered Jimmy and Helen Becks.³³

The busiest time of the dance and party season was between Christmas and New Year's Eve. "All of the various social clubs would raise money during the year in order to entertain during the holidays. Everybody started booking early for the holidays and Montgomery Hall Park would be booked every night. Different groups were fighting to be sure to have a place on the calendar during that period. Some of the events were quite formal. That was our social life," explained Helen Becks.³⁴

Other activities

Outside of the Christmas dance events, the high season of the park was the summer time. A formal activity-filled day always opened the park in June and closed it after Labor Day. The Staunton newspaper described the 1951 opening of the park with this note: "This year marks the fourth season. Since the beginning it has been operated by a committee of Negro citizens, now headed by John T. Miller." On June 11 of that year opening day included softball, swimming, and playground activities.³⁵

Throughout the summer there were Red Cross sponsored swimming classes. A recreation supervisor at the park hosted daily organized activities. During one summer that meant croquet on Monday, horseshoes on Tuesday, basketball on Wednesday, dancing on Thursday, ping pong on Friday, and softball on Saturday. Use of the playground and swimming pool was available every day. Indoor activities included checkers, dominoes, cards, and dancing.

Another popular activity for several summers was the Benevolent Club's flower show that included exhibitors showing off their flowers and the visitors listening to several speakers. Cookies, candies, and flowers were always sold at the show as a fundraiser. Beauty pageants were also popular and for many years a Miss Montgomery Hall Park was crowned every year. Family reunions were popular and club and church wiener roasts drew large crowds. There were also private parties and a number of weddings and receptions took place at the park. There was always a flag raising ceremony in the park every summer.

The Labor Day celebration that marked the close of the summer season often included a horseshoe pitching contest, running events, as well as competitions in ping pong, tennis, croquet, swimming, volleyball, and softball. Prizes were awarded. There were also pony rides, fun on the playground equipment, and indoor games. The day concluded with a dance that lasted until midnight.

Although the pool closed and formal outdoor activities ceased after Labor Day, the park held inside dances and dinners throughout the year. The variety of groups that used the park as a social gathering place is impressive. A typical summer saw the park host forty or fifty lawn parties and group picnics from the Staunton area as well as from farther afield. Youth and adult softball and baseball teams came to the park to compete. An undated list from just one year included the Elks, Masons, Eastern Star, Onyx Club, Daughters of Ethiopia, Matrons Progressive Club, Les Filles Armourettas, Young Men's Progressive Club, VFW, VFW Auxiliary, Club 14, Inc., Hi-Fis, YLDA, Housekeepers Sunshine Circle, two cosmetology groups, the Congenial Thirteen, The Informals, the Benevolent Club, Rose Hill Garden Club, NAACP, six different church groups, and four private individuals.³⁶

After Integration

Integration in Staunton came in 1966. The park committee continued until 1969, but by then all recreational facilities in the city were open to people of all races. Montgomery Hall Park fell off the radar screen for a few years as attention turned toward Gypsy Hill. Many of the park facilities fell into disrepair.

In 1974, the Booker T. Washington Alumni Committee (with Willie S. Washington as President, and Patsy B. Robinson as spokesperson for the group) petitioned city council to restore and upgrade Montgomery Hall Park in order that the park be turned into something useful for the

community.³⁷ Funding soon became the limiting factor in what could be done to the park. The city government agreed to put \$25,000 toward the renovation of the park, but this fell far short of the city's master plan estimate of \$75,000 that was needed.³⁸ According to Patsye B. Robinson, who was involved in bringing the park back into operation after several years of closure, the city was asked to provide additional financial support because it had failed to use budgeted maintenance funds from the previous ten years "(no caretaker on the grounds and not even the grass was being cut)." She explained that "This request was not received favorably and it took many appearances at council meetings before we convinced them to investigate the possibility of renovating and reopening Montgomery Hall Park." ³⁹

In the meantime, in June of 1975, the city received a grant of more than \$400,000 through federal funding to do a comprehensive upgrade to the park. Included in the plans would be upgrading the ballfields, nature trails, tennis courts, bike trails, and picnic areas in order to accommodate more than five thousand visitors. Lighting and parking improvements were also slated. Part of the match for the grant was the accumulated backlog of unspent maintenance monies. As a result of the efforts of the Booker T. Washington alumni committee and the city planners, the park was reopened to the public in 1975.⁴⁰

The reopening of the park was important, but it did not solve the problem of what to do with the aging mansion house. Some wanted to tear down the structure, while others argued that the building was worth saving. In October of 1977 Staunton Mayor Michael E. Kivlighan appointed a committee to study the issue and report back in six months with a recommendation. On the committee were William T. Frazier, executive director of Historic Staunton Foundation; Mrs. Ruth W. Waller, former high school counselor; John D. Lancaster, director of Staunton's Parks and Recreation Department; Kenneth A. Bosserman, science teacher at Shelburne Junior High School; Mrs. Karen F. Painter, real estate saleswoman; Mrs. Patsye B. Robinson, secretary at General Electric; and Mrs. Jane S. Holt, member of the Staunton Recreational Advisory Commission.⁴¹

Mayor Kivlighan warned the committee that "It's do or die this time," citing the fact that three previous attempts to reopen the building had failed. The committee was charged with weighing the cost of razing – estimated to be about \$4,000 – against the cost of renovation – estimated at about \$190,000. Included in the committee's final report was to be recommendations on how the building, if saved, could be used.⁴²

Six months later, the committee, chaired by Lancaster, recommended that the city access the \$250,000 available under a Community Redevelopment grant to renovate the house. The findings and recommendations of the committee were:

Montgomery Hall Building has state and local significance historically, and local significance architecturally.

Montgomery Hall was found to be structurally sound, and it would prove to be less expensive to renovate the existing structure than to build the same amount of new space.⁴³ While some members on city council balked at the estimated annual maintenance cost of \$21,000 a year, the city voted to move forward with renovations. Former city official Frank Pancake celebrated the decision noting, "Gypsy Hill Park is crowded. We have already spent about \$450,000 to improve Montgomery Hall Park and make it a companion park to Gypsy Hill."⁴⁴

Once the renovation was complete, the park building was reopened and dedicated in a special ceremony. The headquarters of the Staunton Parks and Recreation Department is now housed in the former mansion. In 2002, the renovated building was named the Irene Givens Administration Building (posthumously) after "Mom" Givens who was in charge of the programs at the park during its years as a segregated African-American facility. The Montgomery Hall Park proclamation honoring the sixtieth anniversary of the park that was signed by Major Lacy B. King, Jr., on June 17, 2006, called Givens "a beloved community member who dutifully and carefully guided, directed, and mentored the youth of the area"

In 2015, a Virginia Historical Highway marker was erected at the park entrance. Today the 148-acre facility has been upgraded to include walking trails, a disc golf course, picnic shelters, soccer fields, and mountain bike trails. Many of amenities developed by the MHP committee continue today including barbeque areas, softball fields, basketball courts, horse-shoes, playgrounds, tennis courts and, of course, the pool, which has been restored and reopened.⁴⁵

Montgomery Hall Buildings: Development History

Montgomery Hall (now known as the Irene Givens Administration Building) is two-story Colonial Revival styled building that was built in 1907 on the foundation of the original circa 1822-24 dwelling that burned in 1906. In 1902-03, then owner, Frank Walter had retained T.J. Collins, a prominent local Staunton architect, to update and expanded the existing house.

After the Montgomery Hall fire and before the renovation was com-

plete, Collins revised the plans to build a completely new dwelling but kept much of the basic massing of the original. An 1850 plan of Montgomery Hall includes a simple east side elevation sketch of the main house. It shows a two-story main block with a smaller rear ell to the south and what appears to be a second rear addition with a cross gable or hip roof. Beyond that portion of the dwelling is another smaller structure that was likely the kitchen. This linear set of building forms is very similar to the 1907 drawings for the new house.

Collins' 1903 drawings do include side elevations and plans of the original house of 1824. It was a two-story, gable front, temple-style, brick dwelling with a rear ell. The plan contained a front cross hall with two rooms located behind it, each containing a fireplace. This plan is identical to another Staunton residence, the Stuart House (DHR #132-0006) whose original owner was Archibald Stuart, another prominent statesman of the region and undoubtedly a good friend of John Howe Peyton. This 1791 classical revival-styled design historically has been said to reflect the influence of Thomas Jefferson. This claim of a Jefferson connection on the house design has been passed down through the Peyton family for Montgomery Hall as well. It is known that Jefferson was friends with the original owners of both dwellings and was a regular visitor to each property.

The stair in the original Montgomery Hall was located in the ell, not



Irene Givens building in 2016. (Photo by Victoria Leonard).

in the main block of the house. Likewise the stair in the Stuart House is located away and almost hidden from the front hall, an approach that Jefferson favored in not making the staircase a prominent feature is his domestic designs. After the 1906 fire, the earlier drawings were expanded and reworked to create a new Montgomery Hall. T.J. Collins favored Victorian influenced designs in his domestic architectural designs over the emerging Colonial Revival movement. Interior photographs of Montgomery Hall taken shortly after its rebuilding confirm this preference. Dark wood interiors with built-in staircase benches are similar to other Collins interiors of that era.

It is interesting to note that on one of Collins' plans, it states that the remaining brick walls should be removed to ground level and the remaining basement foundation retained on which the new house would be erected. Several of the brick and stone walls under the front of the present house are evidence that these elements do date from the original construction of Montgomery Hall in 1822 to 1824.

Besides the kitchen, there were additional early outbuildings that included an overseer's house, a cottage, a limestone springhouse, a smokehouse, a barn, and slave quarters. None of these survive today except for ruins of the barn and springhouse.

After Walter rebuilt Montgomery Hall in 1907-08, he decided to sell the farm to Bates Warren of Washington, D.C., in 1911. Warren only used the property as a summer retreat and after two years he decided to sell the property. In that regard, he had a brochure printed to aid in that effort. It has various photographs of the house and its interior that largely reflect Collins' plans. In regard to the house, the circa 1913 brochure states:

It is a two-story brick dwelling, built in the colonial style, with wide porches and is finished in hardwood, including hardwood mantels, staircases and stairs. On the main floor is a very large reception hall and parlor, tea room, a colonial bedroom with modern bath, a beautiful library, a spacious dining room, a conservatory, a large den, cloak room, kitchen and pantry, also a cold-storage room. There is a cellar under the entire house which contains a steam heating plant, laundry tubs, etc. The second floor contains 10 spacious bedrooms with large closets and four baths. From the windows of every bedroom one has an excellent view of the mountains and surrounding country. The house has every convenience and is lighted with gas and electricity.

The brochure reveals the following information about the outbuildings on the site:

Immediately in the rear of the mansion is a two-story brick building. The first floor contains an office, a fine billiard room and a well-equipped bowling alley. The second floor contains a gymnasium and a number of bedrooms for week-end parties. There is a good cellar under the entire

building use for storage of root crops. There is also a modern garage and stable combined with quarters for help, and near this is the manager's cottage, and other farm buildings for the home plant. About three hundred yards from the home plant is a comfortable house of twelve rooms and bath, a large sanitary dairy barn, silos, hog houses, etc. In addition to the above are five good cottages and a number of other valuable buildings.

Some of these facilities were erected before the fire, and some that may post date it, but none of them survives today with the exception of the manager's cottage that was moved ca. 1935 to another Peyton property, Steephill (DHR # 132-0031). While the building was called the manager's cottage, it actually was John Howe Peyton's mother's cottage that he built for her on his estate. Steephill was owned at that time by John Lewis Peyton, who was born at Montgomery Hall and the second son of John Howe Peyton. John Lewis Peyton constructed Steephill in 1877-78 in the Gothic Revival style and then retained local architect, Sam Collins (T.J. Collins' son) in 1926-27 to remodel the house in the popular Colonial Revival style.

When the city of Staunton acquired the Montgomery Hall property in 1946 for use as a park for the African-American community of the city, additional facilities were added to the site, the most important of which was a swimming pool and pool house in 1948-49 through a donation from the Catlett family of Staunton. Additional early infrastructure also included tennis courts, a softball field, horseshoe pits, and a playground. In 1956 basketball courts were added. In 1959 the front section of the house was altered by removing interior walls and the main staircase to create a more open and larger space for special events, dances and other gatherings.

Integration occurred in 1966, and by 1969 the city of Staunton took over the operations of the park. By 1974 some in the African-American community were increasingly concerned about the lack of maintenance of the park and the house and pressed the city to do more for this important facility. The result was that in 1975 the city of Staunton authorized \$25,000 in expenditures for restroom facilities, fencing, playground equipment, outdoor grills and improvements to the ball fields.

The city estimated that a comprehensive master planned series of projects would cost \$750,000. In June of 1976, a grant was secured in the amount of \$413,600 through the Commission of Outdoor Recreation for new construction and development projects throughout the park. None of these funds was used to improve or upgrade Montgomery Hall itself. In October of 1977, the city council appointed a Montgomery Hall Committee to recommend what to do with the vacant boarded-up building in the future

and made a recommendation as to the pros and cons of demolishing the historic structure or to reuse it for some undetermined use.

After meeting for a year, the committee made two findings: that the building was historically significant and that it was structurally sound. With the support of the committee chairman, John Lancaster who was the Director of Parks and Recreation, the city decided to renovate part of the house as the new home for the department. Due to limited funds, only the first floor was extensively renovated and the city used the architectural firm of T.J. Collins & Son for the project. Since that project, the department slowly made improvements to the second floor of the house and moved individual offices into former bedrooms.

In 2002 the members of the Staunton City Council officially dedicated the Montgomery Hall Park Administrative Building (Montgomery Hall) in honor of Mrs. Irene Givens who had dedicated over twenty-five years of service to the park and its programs prior to 1970.

In 2005 additions to the park included a lighted soccer complex as well as the Kiwanis Disc Golf Course along with a new \$90,000 playground. In 2008 a new group of mountain bike trails were developed in the park.

Facilities today

Montgomery Hall (Irene Givens Administration Building): Plan

After the 1906 fire, Collins' new plan for the house still reflected several of the existing design elements of the 1822 dwelling. He retained the temple front form of the classical design but eliminated the cross front hall. He added an "L" shaped central stair and created a parlor on the west side of this section while creating a smaller parlor (tea room) on the east side behind which was a bedroom and bath. The interior walls and the staircase of this front block were removed in the 1950s to create a new large community multi-use space for the African-American community. In the 1978 remodeling, the wainscoting and parlor fireplace and mantel were removed as well.

Beyond this front block, the 1906 plan had a new rear hall that contained a secondary entry off an east side porch (a feature that also was present in the 1822 design). Collins also added another staircase off the rear hall and a west facing three-part bay. The staircase remains today but has been enclosed. The area now contains the kitchen but previously was a den.

Beyond this area, a cross-axial wing was created to contain a new dining room (now conference room) with a butler's pantry and bedrooms above. The west side of this section contained a library along with a bathroom and storage areas; this area now contains restrooms for the facility.

The hall continued to a rear two-story ell that housed the kitchen where a third staircase provided yet another route to the second floor. A large open room remained above the kitchen and may have been used for storage or for servants. (Notes on the Collins 1903 drawings indicate that there was an earlier or original kitchen in this same area and it should be demolished and expanded.) The kitchen space was divided into three offices in 1978 for parks staff while the second-floor room remains one large space for use as a crafts room.

The second floor of the rest of the house contains seven bedrooms (ten noted in the 1913 brochure), six of which have fireplaces and all of which open off the extended central hall. There were two bathrooms and most bedrooms contained sinks as well. Most of these bedrooms are used for offices today while there are also several storage rooms. The 1978 remodeling resulted in only one of three phases being constructed due to budget limitations. Thus, much of the second floor retains more of its 1906 plan than the first floor.

The present basement extends under the entire house with the exception of the cross-axial area under which is only a crawl space.

Montgomery Hall (Irene Givens Administration Building) Exterior)

The painted brick residence, with its five-course common bond, has an irregular coursed, rough-cut limestone rubble foundation, and a cross gable roof that is currently covered with architectural asphalt shingles. The original front (north) elevation is characteristic of the Colonial Revival style with its prominent front pediment with its unusual row of saw-tooth bricks capped by modillion blocks in the cornice and an elliptical lunette window. Symmetrical six-over-six, double sash openings and a classically inspired entry are also common in this classically inspired style.

The dominant feature on the façade is a full-width one-story porch with a projecting entry capped with a shallow pediment containing a sunburst design. Tuscan columns resting on limestone piers support the shallow hip roof. The entablature has a plain frieze with dentils that surround the porch while the balusters are a simple rectangular design. The entry consists of an arched opening with an elliptical fanlight containing a leaded glass sunburst. Plain sidelights flank the paneled door with upper glazing. Pilasters frame the entire entry composition and support the entablature above. The Collins designed front porch originally wrapped around both sides of the house and contained a port-cochere on the west elevation. These parts of the porch were removed in the 1978 remodeling.

The majority of windows are six-over-six, double-hung, wooden sash type that can be found on all elevations. The windows on the main block of the dwelling have stone sills and lintels, with the exception of those that meet the entablature and therefore only have sills.

A secondary two-story, three-bay gallery porch is located within the east elevation in the area just south of the front section of the house. Like the front porch, it has a rectangular baluster railing, Tuscan columns, and a simple entablature with dentils. Central steps lead to an additional side entry that opens onto the rear hall. This entry has a paneled door with glazing, sidelights, and a transom. Additionally, an exterior stair to the second floor has been added on the south side of the porch and is enclosed at the main level. The west elevation of this section contains a two-story projecting bay with three windows at each level as well as a side entry.

The cross-axial section's east elevation is two bays with a central end chimney projecting through the roof with the decorative gable's peak meeting in front of the chimney in an unusual arrangement. A north facing two-part bay window opens from the dining room onto the lawn in front of the side porch. Its exterior consists of a paneled base underneath the windows that are flanked and separated by Tuscan pilasters. Above this arrangement is a classical entablature with a plain frieze architrave and a cornice with dentils. The west elevation of the cross-axial section has the same design as the east side.

The rear (south) ell addition is frame construction with brick veneer wall cladding and a brick foundation. Its end gable roof has minimal decoration but does have cornice returns. The east elevation of the ell has a centrally located large chimney but no evidence of remaining interior fireplaces. Like the original, windows on the addition are double-hung wooden sash with six-over-six lights and stone sills. The south end elevation features a six-paneled solid door with a small roof overhang supported by decorative brackets that dates from the 1978 remodeling. Two west side entrances are located at the intersection of the rear ell with the cross-axial section of the house. A small hip roof covers these entries and also dates from 1978. The kitchen wing was divided into three separate rooms and serve as offices in the present facility.

Montgomery Hall (Irene Givens Administration Building): Interior

Much of the plan on the first floor was heavily altered in the 1978 conversion to park facilities and offices. The original center hall was removed earlier in the 1950s to create a new large community multi-use space for

the African-American community. All finishes in this space and much of the first floor were updated in the 1978 renovation including a vinyl sheet goods floor and a dropped acoustical ceiling with fluorescent lighting and flush metal doors and frames. At that time the remaining mantel and hearth were removed as well as the wainscoting in this large space.

Beyond this area, a hall extends along the east side porch and contains a second staircase of a dogleg design that has been enclosed. It is constructed of oak, has turned balusters and rectangular newels with fluted and paneled sections. This stair extends to the attic that is floored and contains mechanical equipment and ducts to serve the second floor below.

Also opening off the hall is a new community kitchen that has been installed on the north side of the house that contains the original bay window. New restroom facilities are located beyond the kitchen in the cross-axial portion of the house.

Off the hall on the east side is the original dining room that has been converted to a conference room. It is one of the few spaces that retain its original feature from 1907 including maple floors, oak woodwork, decorative ceiling joists and a classically inspired mantel. This element has pairs of half-fluted Ionic columns supporting a tiered shelf with bead-and-reel decoration and a plain frieze. An unadorned over-mantel with tapered sides and a bead molding caps the composition.

Most of the second-floor bedrooms have been converted to office spaces or for storage. Several walls and fireplaces were removed in the former two front bedrooms to create a single large office. In two of the former bedrooms on the west side of the hall are identical Colonial Revival era mantels with elongated bracket-like supports on which rests a frieze containing applied floral designs. The office on the west side of the cross-axial section contains what appears to be an earlier mantel relocated from another structure. It has pilaster-like elements that are composed of symmetrical semi-circular moldings, a design that is repeated horizontally within a panel of the frieze. The maple floors (some painted) remain on the second floor as does the molded baseboard and trim. The original doors on the second floor are the five-stacked panel variety.

The original section of the basement has a combination of painted and unpainted brick and limestone rubble walls with brick interior arched supports and brick piers as well. A reused six-panel door with its original blue paint and brass knob, likely dating from the early nineteenth century, remains in this section of the basement as well as an outside entrance

that remains from the 1822 construction. It retains its original wood lintel although the batten door has been installed within a later smaller opening. The base of the original fireplace of the east front parlor remains as well. The basement extends to the south under most of the house and further study might reveal more of the original plan as the dwelling was expanded in its early period. The rear of the basement under the cross-axial section is a crawl space with brick piers. A concrete floor has been installed in the entire basement along with a variety of mechanical equipment.

Outbuildings & Site Features

Springhouse Ruins (c. 1850) Contributing Site #2

One of the oldest site features, the springhouse ruins is located north of the Springel Softball Field and is noted on the 1850 plat of the property. The limestone walls of this U-shaped structure remain and the four corner iron rods may have once provided support for wood members of a gable roof.

Barn Site Ruins (c. 19th & 20th centuries) Contributing Site #3

The barn site ruins are located west of the flag football field and what is today a wooded area and this large foundation appears to be the outline of a previous bank barn. The masonry foundation was installed against the slope and consists of a mixture of limestone rubble and later concrete. The wall steps down on the north end and continues to form an ell. Other parts of the walls are constructed in sections of limestone rubble with openings that were later filled in around the turn of the twentieth century with alternating courses of brick parts and poured concrete.

Bathhouse (c. 1948 with later upgrades) Contributing Building #4

The bathhouse is located on the main lawn east of the Irene Givens Administration Building and south of the main playground. This one-story, three-bay, rectangular building is constructed with concrete block and has a side gable asphalt shingle roof. It has wide, boxed eaves and the gables have vertical board siding. Entrances are located through flush metal doors on both the west and north elevations. The south elevation has two window vents, and the north elevation has a window vent, an equipment window, and one two-over-two fixed window with multiple lights.

Pool (1948, Renovated 1990) Contributing Structure #5

The pool, located on the main lawn east of the Irene Givens Administration Building is an in-ground pool with both a deep portion and a shallow area and is surrounded by a concrete terrace. It contains multiple metal picnic tables, metal benches, and a water slide to the deep end of the pool. A small lawn is located on the west end of the pool area. The



Springhouse ruins (top) and barn ruins in 2017. (Photos by Victoria Leonard)

pool borders the bathhouse and is surrounded by a tall chain-link fence topped with barbed wire.

Mechanical Room at Pool (1948) Contributing Building #6

This small, one-story, L-shaped building is attached to and located under the pool, situated against the east sloping side of its hillside site. It has a metal door with a lower vent in the center of its east elevation.

Horseshoe Pit (1940s) Contributing Site #7

The horseshoe pit is located on a flat portion of the main lawn east of the Irene Givens Administration and south of the pool. It has two facing sets of frames and stakes. Each pit location contains a wooden frame, reinforced with three metal supports along the back, and a metal stake in front.

Main Playground (2006) Noncontributing Site #8

This large playground is located on the main lawn south of the Irene Givens Administration Building and north of the pool area. The main feature of the playground is a large play system with multiple slides and climbing components. In addition to another separate climbing net, there is a small climbing wall, three swing sets, monkey bars, and a whirl. The playground equipment is contained in a wood-chip area with several metal benches and picnic tables placed around it.

Lancaster Girls' Softball Field (c. 1940s, later upgrades in 1970s) Non-contributing Site #9

One of the earlier softball fields, this small field is located south of the Irene Givens Administration Building across the road from the building's parking lot. This facility that has been completely upgraded consists of a traditional softball diamond surrounded by a chain-link fence, two dugouts, and a backstop. Additional site features include bleachers, light poles, and a scoreboard.

Frank L. Hamilton Basketball Courts (1956, later upgrades in 2005) Non-contributing Site #10

The basketball courts are located on the main lawn east of the Irene Givens administration building. The rebuilt basketball area consists of two courts with a polymeric rubber surface contained within a tall chain-link fence.

Restroom Facility by Basketball Courts (1970s) Noncontributing Site #11

This one-story, three-bay rectangular building has a running brick bond and an asphalt shingle side gable roof. The side gables, on the north and south elevations, are comprised of wide louvered restroom vents. The west elevation contains three evenly spaced flush metal doors.

Tennis Courts (1972) Noncontributing Site #12

There are four tennis courts located on the sloping hill east of the Irene Givens Administration Building. Two of the courts are located on a terrace that connects by a stair to the two lower courts. Each court has a polymeric rubber surface and is bound by its own chain-link fence. One of the upper courts recently has been replaced with a new rubber surface.

Upper Restroom Facility Near Shelters (1972) Noncontributing Building #13

This restroom facility is located at the far southwestern corner of the park well beyond most of the additional park features. This one-story rectangular building has vertical board siding and a front gable asphalt shingle roof. The front or south elevation has a recessed vestibule with side entrances to the separate restrooms.

Shelter #1 (1972) Noncontributing Building #14

This picnic shelter is located at the far southwestern corner of the park just north of the Upper Restroom Facility. This open-sided rectangular shelter has an asphalt shingle gable roof with vertical board siding enclosing the gable ends. The shelter has a concrete floor, and thick, braced wooden posts support the structure. The east end of the shelter has a large stone exterior chimney.

Shelter #2 (1972) Noncontributing Building #15

This picnic shelter is located at the far southwestern corner of the park northwest of Shelter #1. This open-sided rectangular shelter has an asphalt shingle gable roof with vertical board siding enclosing the gable ends. The shelter has a concrete floor, and thick, braced wooden posts support the structure. The west end of the shelter has a large stone exterior chimney.

Shelter #3 (1972) Noncontributing Building #16

This picnic shelter is located at the far southwestern corner of the park south of both Shelters #1 and #2 and the restroom facility. This open-sided rectangular shelter has an asphalt shingle gable roof with vertical board siding enclosing the gable ends. The shelter has a concrete floor, and thick, braced wooden posts support the structure. The south end of the shelter has a large stone exterior chimney.

Harold V. Harlow Softball Field (1984) Noncontributing Site #17

This larger field is located in the middle of the park closer to the secondary park entrance. This field consists of the traditional softball diamond surrounded by a chain-link fence, two fenced dugout areas, and a backstop. Additional site features include bleachers, lighting poles, and a scoreboard. This field has its own gravel parking area south of the field and can be reached directly from the road winding through the park.

Springel Softball Field (1994) Noncontributing Site #18

This field is located across the road and down the hill northwest of the Irene Givens Administration Building. It consists of the traditional softball diamond surrounded by a chain-link fence, two dugouts, and a backstop. Additional site features include bleachers and lighting poles.

Temporary Garage/Shed Near Flag Football Field (2005) Noncontributing Structure #19

This one-story, one-bay, long rectangular temporary shed has vertical board siding and an asphalt shingle gambrel roof. The single-bay northeast elevation contains a vinyl, mechanical sliding, sectional garage door. A single shed door is located on the northwest elevation.

Kiwanis Disc Golf Course (2005) Noncontributing Site #20

This full eighteen-hole golf course consists of the traditional fairways, green and tee areas. The course is spread throughout the east portion of the park amongst the park's main facilities. Course areas are not heavily marked. This small, white, metal-clad pavilion consists of a double-sided two-person bench with an advertisement board and a small overhang clad with standing-seam metal roofing. A flat concrete pad is located just east of the bench.

MHP Soccer Complex (2005) Noncontributing Site #21

The soccer complex is located at the far south end of the park away from the main area of the park. It features one large soccer field closest to the road, and a second field to the east. Other site features include goals, bleachers, and lighting throughout the complex.

Soccer Pavilion and Restroom Facility (2005) Noncontributing Building #22

The soccer pavilion is located at the MHP soccer complex just north of the fields. This one-story rectangular building with its asphalt shingle gable roof is divided into two sections. The north side is a concrete block restroom and concessions area while the south side is an open pavilion with a concrete floor and wooden posts.

Second Playground (1980s) Noncontributing Site #23

This playground is located at the far southwestern corner of the park near the picnic shelters and restroom facility. Much smaller than the main playground, the equipment here is more spread out in a wooded area and includes two swing sets and a four seat Buck-A-Bout.

Flag Football Field (1994) Noncontributing Site #24

This field was re-graded to create a football field size playing area and additional temporary boundary markers are added when games are played.

Temporary Shed at Pool (2016) Noncontributing Structure #25

This small, approximately 50-square-foot walk-in resin storage shed has a front gable roof and double-doors with glazing on the north elevation.

Handicap Ramp from Parking Lot to Pool (2016) Noncontributing Structure #26

This recently installed handicap ramp consists of a poured concrete ramp with pipe railing in three ninety-degree turned sections leading from the building parking lot to the pool.

Concession Building by Lancaster Girls' Softball Field (1970s): Noncontributing Building #27

This building is located next to the Lancaster Girls' Softball field in

the main area of the park. This small, one-story, T-shaped building has vertical board siding and a cross-gable asphalt shingle roof. Both sections of the east elevation have single flush metal doors.



Park entrance today. (Photo by Victoria Leonard)

(Abbreviated) Summary Report: Archaeological Survey and Evaluation Introduction and Objectives

In January, 2015, James Madison University (JMU) agreed to assist the city of Staunton in its commitment to document and manage cultural resources at Montgomery Hall Park. This action followed a recommendation by the Virginia Department of Historic Resources for an archaeological survey to locate contributing elements of the historic property. The results of the archaeological survey would complement the anticipated evaluation of standing structures at the park.

During the spring and fall semesters of 2015, and again in the spring of 2016, groups of JMU students conducted investigation of selected areas under the supervision of Dr. Dennis Blanton. Specifically, the leading archaeological objectives of the project are as follows:

- Locate surviving archaeological sites;

- Determine their periods of occupation and the nature of activities carried out on them; estimate their spatial extent; evaluate their physical integrity; and make a preliminary evaluation of their eligibility for the National Register of Historic Places.

The archaeological survey effort is ongoing and thus far it has entailed evaluation of specific, high-probability locations on the property, rather

than a comprehensive survey. Montgomery Hall Park is large and has been heavily developed over many decades as a public space. Today the property is a mosaic of wooded and open areas with the latter dominated by playing fields, playgrounds, and picnic areas. The most prominent structure in the park is the reconstructed Montgomery Hall residence, sited according to most accounts on the precise location of the nineteenth-century plantation home of the Peyton family. For obvious reasons the sections of the park proximate to the residence have been the focal point of the archaeological survey. Additional emphasis has been given to nearby areas where supporting plantation buildings such as a barn complex and spring house are known to have been located.

Results: Montgomery Hall Yard

To date we have excavated forty-four small, systematically-located shovel tests and four test units in the yard area, nearly all of which were placed in the eastern and northern sections of the yard within about 130 feet of the extant structure. Four judgmentally-located shovel tests were opened south and west of the structure. The standard interval between shovel tests is ten meters but in some areas of particular interest that distance was halved.

Impressive plantation-era archaeological evidence has been documented in the north yard of the manor house beginning about twenty meters from the front porch and continuing northward to the current paved access road. This evidence is strongly indicative of the location of a former domestic structure that we infer at this stage to have been the “cottage” constructed by John Howe Peyton for his widowed mother, Anne Hooe Peyton. She resided on the plantation for about a decade, between the time of its founding and the time of her death in 1833. This discovery is likewise believed to comport with the depiction of a curious, small structure on an 1847 plat of the property, immediately in front of the main house.

Archaeological evidence in this area consists of a range of complex and relatively thick deposits containing a high density of nineteenth-century artifacts, most of which we can associate with the first half of the century. Presently we have defined its presence in area measuring 80 by 100 feet.

Results: Barn Complex

Another early focus of our survey and evaluation was the ruin of a large barn complex located westward of the main house on the opposite side of a large swale now occupied by playing fields. Sections of extant

stone, brick, and concrete masonry reveal a complex history extending across the nineteenth and the twentieth centuries, most likely reflective of shifting agricultural practices and changing ownership.

A few exploratory, judgmentally-placed shovel tests in and adjacent to the stone and brick foundations generally revealed very shallow deposits bearing little in the way of artifactual evidence. However, a groundhog burrow along the eastern margin of the ruin exposed an abundance of artifacts indicative of relatively deep and informative deposits. This location was chosen for excavation of a one-meter square test unit.

Excavation in the test unit reveals a thick, intact cultural deposit about eighty centimeters thick. The more prominent, lower horizon mainly consists of demolition debris (primarily brick fragments and mortar). This layer is apparently the result of a major renovation event at the barn, perhaps following a fire. Later this material was capped by a zone of relatively uniform, loamy soil interspersed with coal cinders, animal bone, and other debris dating mainly from the first half of the twentieth century.

The thirteen shovel tests excavated in and around the barn ruin are insightful in spite of the low artifact density. Immediately northeast of the barn foundation two tests recovered relatively abundant animal bone. This material, together with the bone in the nearby test unit, fairly clearly testifies to use of the area for kitchen-related disposal and perhaps butchery. Tests within the confines of what we believe is the earliest section of the barn (southern section) indicated deposition of clayey fill. Here again is a suggestion the barn experienced a long use-life but one that entailed major alterations along the way.

Results: Spring House Area

Attention has also been given to a spring house that is indicated on a mid-nineteenth century plat of the property and today marked by a surviving stone, brick, and concrete enclosure. This feature is located just downslope from a softball/baseball field northwest of the main house and immediately south of the railroad right-of-way. Eleven shovel tests have been excavated in the vicinity of the spring house.

Because the spring remains active, the extent of our investigation has been restricted by waterlogged deposits, and even running water. But to the extent we can make observations it appears the spring house, much like the barn, underwent a series of improvements over time. For example, the stone masonry base was finished with a brick and mortar, arched covering, perhaps later in its existence. There is also indication the area around the spring house was excavated to enhance flow and improve

access. Indeed, we suspect the flow was channelized and that evidence of those improvements would be found below the present surface.

Finally, sparse evidence of prehistoric activity at the spring has been recovered. One fragmentary, quartzite projectile point and a piece of quartzite debitage were found in surrounding shovel tests.

Results: Twentieth-century Dump

A local informant reported a small dumping area several hundred meters south of the barn ruin. It was sampled by excavation of three shovel tests. Artifacts from the tests, combined with observation of related debris at the surface, indicates that the dumping occurred around the middle of the twentieth century but the material included objects dating up to several decades earlier. The ultimate origin of this material remains uncertain but we propose that the location was, for a time, a disposal area associated with a nearby farmhouse.

Working Conclusions and Recommendations

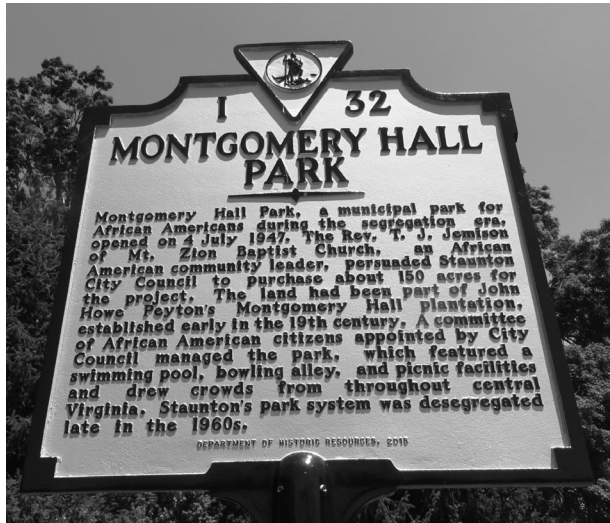
Results generated to-date allow for a preliminary recommendation of NRHP eligibility. In brief, archaeological evidence of the Montgomery Hall plantation survives with sufficient integrity in three locations to allow for argument of NRHP eligibility at the local or regional level. The strongest case can be made at this point for the eligibility of the remains of a domestic structure in the front yard of the manor house owing to the more intensive level of archaeological investigation there. Early indications from work around the spring house almost guarantee the same outcome. Evidence from the area of the barn complex is less definitive but an ultimate recommendation of eligibility can be anticipated.

Major Bibliographical References

Avery, Jane Gray website John Howe Peyton's Montgomery Hall Estate. <http://johnhowepeytonsmontgomeryhall.com>. Website accessed Summer 2016.

Blanton, Dennis B., Principal Investigator, *Report on Results of Archaeological Survey and Evaluation of Portions of Montgomery Hall Park in Staunton, Virginia*. 2017, Department of Sociology and Anthropology, James Madison University, Harrisonburg, VA.

City of Staunton 2015 Montgomery Hall Park. <http://www.staunton.va.us/directory/departments-h-z/recre>



Historic Highway Marker erected at the entrance of Montgomery Hall Park. (Photo by Victoria Leonard)

ation-parks/parks/montgomery-hall-park. Web page accessed December, 2015 and February 2017.

Drawings of Montgomery Hall before and after the fire by T.J. Collins, Historic Staunton Foundation archives, Drawer 28 – File 20-36 & Drawer 26 - File 20-36.

Frazier, William T., *T. J. Collins: A Local Virginia Architect and His Practice at the Turn of the Century*. 1976, Master of Architectural History Thesis, University of Virginia, Charlottesville, Va.

“History of Montgomery Hall Park,” by Patsye Brent Robinson, *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, 2015.

John Howe Peyton plantation plat. Will Book 30, page 327. Augusta County Courthouse, Staunton, Va.

Montgomery Hall sales booklet, c. 1913.

Montgomery Hall Park Committee minutes book, 1946-1966, Augusta County Historical Society archives.

“MONTGOMERY HALL PARK.” Historic Marker, Virginia Department of Historic Resources. 2015.

“Montgomery Hall Park turns sixty years old” by News Leader writers, *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, 2006, pg. 50-79.

Numerous newspaper articles from the 1840s-1980s

Peyton, John Lewis, *History of Augusta County, Virginia*, 1882, Yost, Staunton.

Peyton, John Lewis, *Memoir of John Howe Peyton*, 1894, A.B. Blackburn & Co., Staunton.
Staunton News-Leader July 3 and 4, 1947.
 Staunton Parks and Recreation. "Montgomery Hall Park - History." Staunton, Va. 2016. <http://www.staunton.va.us/directory/departments-h-z/recreation-parks/parks/montgomery-hall-park>.
 Staunton Parks and Recreation. "The History of Montgomery Hall Park." *Staunton Parks and Recreation*, 2013, 14-16.
 U.S. Census records including population schedules, agricultural census, and slave schedules
 Virginia Department of Historic Resources, Architectural Survey Form. *Irene Givens Administration Building*. DHR ID: 132-0020. V-CRIS.

Endnotes

- ¹ Interview with Helen and Jimmy Becks of Staunton, March 30, 2017.
- ² John Lewis Peyton, *Memoir of John Howe Peyton In Sketches by His Contemporaries* (Staunton, Va.: A.B. Blackburn & Co., 1894) and John Lewis Peyton, *History of Augusta County, Virginia* (Staunton, Va.: Yost, 1894).
- ³ Peyton, *Memoir of John Howe Peyton*.
- ⁴ *Ibid.*, 9.
- ⁵ Rick Chittum, undated research paper for Historic Staunton Foundation.
- ⁶ Peyton, *Memoir of John Howe Peyton*, 9-10.
- ⁷ *Ibid.*, 10.
- ⁸ *Ibid.*, 11.
- ⁹ *Staunton Spectator and General Advertiser*, May 27, 1896.
- ¹⁰ *Alexandria Gazette*, Nov. 1, 1871.
- ¹¹ *Staunton Spectator and General Advertiser*, October 24, 1871.
- ¹² Avery, Jane Gray website John Howe Peyton's Montgomery Hall Estate. <http://johnhowepeytonsmontgomeryhall.com>.
- ¹³ Montgomery Hall sales booklet, c. 1913, archives Augusta County Historical Society.
- ¹⁴ Staunton newspaper article, February 16, 1906.
- ¹⁵ Montgomery Hall Drawings, Historic Staunton Foundation archives.
- ¹⁶ *Richmond Times Dispatch*, July 1, 1913.
- ¹⁷ Avery, Jane Gray website John Howe Peyton's Montgomery Hall Estate. <http://johnhowepeytonsmontgomeryhall.com>.
- ¹⁸ "Montgomery Hall Park turns sixty years old" by *News Leader* writers, *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, 2006, 50-79.
- ¹⁹ Montgomery Hall Park Committee (MHPC) minutes book, 1946-1966, Augusta County Historical Society archives.
- ²⁰ *Ibid.*
- ²¹ The opening of Montgomery Hall Park comes from a compilation of information in the MHCP minutes notebook and *Staunton News-Leader* newspapers July 3 and July 4 of 1947.
- ²² MHPC minutes book.
- ²³ MHPC minutes book (entire section).
- ²⁴ Interview with Helen and Jimmy Becks of Staunton, March 30, 2017.
- ²⁵ *Ibid.*
- ²⁶ *Ibid.*, and "The History of Montgomery Hall Park," flyer produced by the Staunton Parks and Recreation Department, date unknown.
- ²⁷ Interview with Eugenia Becks Taylor, March 4, 2017.
- ²⁸ MHPC minutes book.
- ²⁹ Interview with Eugenia Becks Taylor.
- ³⁰ MHPC minutes book.

³¹Ibid.

³²Interview with Helen and Jimmy Becks of Staunton.

³³Ibid.

³⁴Ibid.

³⁵*Staunton News-Leader*, June 13, 1951.

³⁶MHPC minutes.

³⁷“History of Montgomery Hall Park,” by Patsy Brent Robinson, *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, 2015.

³⁸“The History of Montgomery Hall Park,” flyer.

³⁹Ibid.

⁴⁰“The History of Montgomery Hall Park,” flyer and “History of Montgomery Hall Park,” by Robinson

⁴¹Brown, Bill, “Mayor names group to decide fate of Montgomery Hall mansion,” *Staunton News-Leader*, October 31, 1977.

⁴²Ibid.

⁴³“The History of Montgomery Hall Park,” flyer.

⁴⁴“Recreation Dept. needs Montgomery Hall,” Editorial, *Staunton News-Leader*, May 21, 1978.

⁴⁵City of Staunton 2015: Montgomery Hall Park. <http://www.staunton.va.us/directory/departments-h-z/recreation-parks/parks/montgomery-hall-park>.

Book reviews

Editor's Note: The following section consists of reviews of recent books on regional and Virginia history as well as several that pertain to American history. Unless otherwise noted, these reviews are by AHB Book Review Editor and Associate Editor Daniel A. Métraux, retired Professor of Asian Studies at Mary Baldwin College. Please send any reviews or questions about reviews to the AHB's Book Review Editor, Daniel Métraux at dmetraux@marybaldwin.edu. The deadline for all reviews is October 1, 2018.

Edward L. Ayers, *The Thin Light of Freedom: The Civil War and Emancipation in the Heart of America*. New York and London: W.W. Norton & Company, 2017. xxiii + 576 pages. ISBN: 978-0-393-29263-3. \$35

Edward L. Ayers, a renowned historian of the Civil War and Reconstruction eras and president emeritus of the University of Richmond, has written numerous books on these topics including *What Caused the Civil War: Reflections on the South and Southern History* and *In the Presence of Mine Enemies: Civil War in the Heart of America, 1859-1863*. The latter work, published in 2003, focuses on two counties in the Great Valley of Virginia, Franklin County (and the city of Chambersburg) in Pennsylvania and Augusta County and the city of Staunton in western Virginia. While Ayers provides a very detailed analysis of the major developments and trends that led to the war and sustained it in both areas through mid-1863, the focus is on the thoughts, actions, aspirations and suffering of ordinary citizens and the impact of the war on them. *The Thin Light of Freedom* is a natural sequel to *Mine Enemies*, covering the war from the battle of Gettysburg in July of 1863 to Appomattox as well as the Reconstruction and postwar eras up through 1902.

Although Ayers devotes a highly satisfactory look at Reconstruction and beyond, the focus of the book is on the fighting between Gettysburg and Appomattox. Readers in the areas around Augusta County and Staunton will be deeply impressed with the vast amount of attention that Ayers gives these two communities. The narrative is based in the experiences of soldiers and civilians, both free and enslaved, whose lives are thrown into chaos by the bitter war. We see the conflict through the eyes of farmers, laborers, and their wives and in the vast quantity of letters sent by soldiers. Ayers brings us the reactions of prominent Staunton-Augusta citizens like John Imboden, a businessman and politician who served as an officer in the Confederate army throughout the war, Joseph Waddell, a respected historian, and Jedediah Hotchkiss, the famous mapmaker and surveyor who served Stonewall Jackson and other Confederates. Ayers also devotes many pages to the top political leader of Franklin County, Alexander K. McClure.

The main thesis of Ayers' book is the totality of the war and the terrible carnage that it left in its wake. There is less attention paid to the military strategies of both armies than to the physical destruction wrought by the war and the suf-

fering not only of soldiers, but civilians as well. What makes this book so valuable and innovative is the author's focus on average citizens from all classes including slaves and free African-Americans. In Franklin County 3,264 men served in the U.S. Army, roughly forty-four percent of all men there between the ages of eighteen and forty-five. In Augusta County, 2,784 men served in the Confederate army, sixty-nine percent of all county men between eighteen and forty-five. Twenty-six percent of Augusta's men were captured, thirty-four percent suffered wounds, seven percent were killed in action and twelve percent died from disease. The result was that "the casualty rate for all the men who enlisted in Augusta was over ninety percent." The rate in Franklin County was twenty-six percent.

Ayer's decision to focus on the Valley of Virginia makes perfect sense—the Valley served as a microcosm of the totality of the conflict that was fought on many fronts often separated by hundreds of miles. The North saw the capture of the Valley, the "breadbasket of the Confederacy, as being a vital necessity in its drive to destroy Lee's Army of Northern Virginia. During the last year of the war. The Valley would "come under assault from north and south, east and west, inside and outside." General Sheridan's capture of Staunton and the destruction of the railway link between Staunton and Lee's forces was pivotal in the war's outcome.

Ayers implies that Lee had several reasons for his invasion of Pennsylvania in the early summer of 1863. A primary factor was that the armies of the North and South had sucked up virtually all the food and supplies that Virginia could provide them. The luxurious farm land of Pennsylvania could provide Lee's forces with enough food and fodder to keep his army going indefinitely. Lee hoped to stay in Pennsylvania for many months.

Another factor was that by 1863 Lee and other Confederate leaders had come to the realization that they could not militarily defeat the North. Their strategy was to extend the war as long as possible with the very realistic hope that the people of the North would in due course tire of the fighting and carnage and would sue for a negotiated peace—or hope that the 1864 presidential election would bring about Lincoln's defeat. The reason that Lee continued to hold out in the fall of 1864 and the winter and early spring of 1865 against hopeless odds was again the feeling that the North would become too exasperated to continue fighting.

Ayers demonstrates the totality of the war through his discussions of the burning of farms and other civilian property by Union forces in the Valley in 1864 and 1865 and the Confederate burning of the Pennsylvania town of Chambersburg in 1864.

Ayers' account of the aftermath of the war in Staunton and Augusta is very detailed. We get a good look at the Freedmen's Bureau that was established in Staunton, the creation of schools for the children of former slaves, and the political uncertainties and chaos that plagued Virginia as well as the whole South after the war.

Ayers' two books, *In the Presence of Mine Enemies* and *The Thin Light of Freedom*, which when read together provide an incredibly clear and detailed

view not only of the war itself, but also of the controversies that led to the war as well as its aftermath. The writing is remarkably clear and the level of research is most impressive. Readers of this journal will be especially interested in the very detailed history of the war and reconstruction era in Staunton and Augusta County. My only disappointment is a weak epilogue. Some closing thoughts about the whole Civil War era would have added strength to Ayers' narrative.

Laten Ervin Bechtel, Interviewer. *In Their Words: Growing Up In Segregated Staunton and Augusta County, Virginia*. Staunton: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2017. ISBN: 978-1934368435. 301 pp. \$25

Today residents of Staunton and Augusta County live in a far more integrated community than did earlier generations before the civil rights movement and legislation of the 1950s and 1960s. My own neighborhood, Hillcrest, which I am told was closed to African Americans in earlier days, is blessed with a solid mixture of racial backgrounds. The region's schools are fully integrated, theaters, shops, restaurants, and parks are open to all, and there is more participation by African Americans in local government and on the police force. Outwardly, at least, the sad days of segregation are gone. There is often a human tendency to try and forget the unpleasant aspects of the past, to sweep such memories "under the carpet," to remember the "good old days" in a golden light. Segregation and racism are legacies that we would love to forget, but they are as much a part of our history as anything. The South is too often condemned for its history of segregation, but the truth is that racism has existed and may continue to exist in all parts of this country. Anthropologist Margaret Mead once said, "To know the present and plan ahead for the future, we must absolutely understand our past."

Staunton and Augusta County had a long experience with segregation. Local historian Laten Ervin Bechtel has performed a major service over the past few years by studying the era of segregation and producing several books on the topic including *That's Just The Way It Was: A Chronological and Documentary History of African-American Schools in Staunton and Augusta County* (Lot's Wife Publishing, 2010) and her most recent work, *In Their Words: Growing Up in Segregated Staunton and Augusta County*. Her mission was to interview many older African-Americans to capture their memories of life in a segregated society while they are still alive. Bechtel then developed each set of interviews into "life stories" told and approved by each participant. Her book, *In Their Words*, is a lengthy compilation of thirty life stories by a representative sample of elderly African Americans. We hear directly from them about "the way it was" during the last gasp of the segregation era in the early and mid-twentieth century in Staunton and Augusta County.

The image that sticks out after reading the introduction and twenty-nine chapters (average length nine to twelve pages) is that during segregation, there existed two separate self-sustaining cultures, which had little to do with each

other. White culture enjoyed a higher standard of living and many advantages and the black culture was often subservient to the other. One example of this subservience frequently mentioned throughout the chapters is the fact that the text books given to black schools were hand-me-down used ones that had been worn out in the white schools. Yet, as Bechtel reminds us, “local black citizens built their own thriving subculture that created parallel yet unique institutions and services.” (xv)

Bechtel picks up a theme in her introduction—which reappears in many of the chapters—that the end of segregation and black movement into a white world was on occasion met with mixed feelings in the black community. Bechtel writes:

Indeed, many of those interviewed expressed mixed feelings about transferring to white schools from black schools once segregation was abolished because they knew they would be leaving a nurturing environment that responded to their needs and realities. One person remembered that while they understood that “it was for the advancement of us,” nevertheless “we had to give up everything we had known,” including, she explained, losing their connection to “black history....and identity” and the disappearance of black-owned businesses.

Bechtel, in her very effective introduction to this work, remarks: Perhaps one thing that really stands out in these interviews is the resilience of local black women and men in the face of racial discrimination. Despite being treated by law and custom as second-class citizens and the constraints placed upon them by the dominant white culture, these local men and women would not let that culture define them as human beings or restrict their potential. They broke through these barriers, created thriving schools and communities, claimed their dignity, worked to end inequality, and went on to live productive lives. (xiv)

Although segregation was everywhere, it was not necessarily a part of everyday conversation. One interviewee, The Rev. Dr. Joseph Edward Walker Sr., reflects:

I do not recall my parents talking about segregation or why we could not go to certain places. I knew there was a difference from a young age. We had certain places we could go and certain places we could not go. That’s the way we were taught. I knew we could only go to the Strand Theatre in Staunton and I had to sit upstairs. I didn’t think anything about it at the time. I knew that I couldn’t go to Lee High School but that’s just the way it was. (269)

Blacks who followed the rules and refrained from disrupting life could in

theory lead quiet and fulfilling lives in their communities, but some of those who openly defied the system, according to some of those interviewed here, become victims of white police violence. Nevertheless, breaking through barriers was something that many of those interviewed here had the courage and drive to succeed, even though it involved taking risks. Ophie Kier writes:

I was determined to go where I wasn't wanted. In my career, I made a point of going in those careers where I didn't see anybody like me. I was the first black realtor in Staunton.... Then [later on] I went into banking. When I was being interviewed by the associate director of banking services, his question to me was, "How do you feel a black man could work in this business with white clients?" I said, I would work with them the same way I would with black ones..."(138-139)

Kier later decided to make contributions to city government. He served on the Staunton Industrial Development Authority for many years before launching a highly successful bid for a place on the City Council.

A key factor in the advancement of African Americans, notes Kier, is education:

I am just so proud of my people and who we are. I look back at how we were not allowed to be educated and we were called ignorant. They said we could not learn. But yet we have to be among the strongest to survive that journey. We learned a lot we weren't taught and we continued to advance.(139)

Another road out of the secluded segregation of Staunton was military service. Many males interviewed by Bechtel experienced military life including being stationed abroad. Serving their country gave them a broader perspective on who they were and what they could accomplish in life. James A. Becks writes:

My generation did differently than that of our parents. I know I viewed things differently after I came out of the service. Before that I had never wanted to do anything to embarrass or harm my mom and dad in any way. But after being in the service, I knew that things could be different and we did not have to settle for the same old way of doing things.(29)

A number of the interviewees state that while genuine progress has been made, racism is by no means dead. Linda Marie Douglas Darcus complains that when she bought furniture in recent years at a regional store, she had to pay a higher rate because of her race. But she is even more disturbed by the level of racism that might emerge during the Trump presidency and by the apparent disrespect shown to President Obama by many politicians and members of the press that belittled him.

Walter Brown speculates that while we in the Staunton-Augusta region have made good progress, "The biggest problem even today, we have not openly dealt with the race issue. We haven't talked about it. Walking around not wanting to believe it happened is not facing reality. Yes it did happen, let's go on."(42) We must look at where we are today, decide what must be done to make things better, and then "move forward."

Laten Ervin Bechtel has performed a critically important service to this region through this book. Many of the African Americans who were still young in the waning years of segregation are now very old and several in the book, like former Staunton City Councilwoman Rita Wilson, have already passed away. Bechtel realized the importance of tapping their memories and hearing their stories before they too pass on.

The individual chapters are clearly written and the text flows very well. Each story is remarkably different from any other, but taken together one gets a very broad sense of the worldview of African Americans in the closing days of the age of segregation. *In Their Own Words* will serve as an invaluable historical document and learning tool for many generations to come. Bechtel has performed a critical public service as has Lot's Wife Publishing.

A companion piece that should be published in the near future is a compendium of interviews with whites who lived during the same period covered by Bechtel in her current work. Such a project would be useful, but I wonder how honest whites would be if asked to discuss their views on race and racism. A few might be very frank with their views, but many would probably be too embarrassed to admit that they had held racist ideas back then. But, anyway, it's an interesting idea.

Andrei Kushnir, *Oh, Shenandoah: Paintings of the Historic Valley and River*. With a Foreword by Dana Hand Evans, Essays by Warren R. Hofstra and William M. S. Rasmussen, Historical Vignettes by Jeffrey C. Everett and an Afterword by Edward L. Ayers. Staunton Virginia: George F. Thompson Publishing in association with the American Land Publishing Project, Museum of the Shenandoah Valley, and Shenandoah University, 2016. ISBN: 978-1938086410. 416pp. \$59.95

My first encounter with Staunton and the Shenandoah Valley occurred in early August 1963 when a teacher at Trinity School in New York took a group of boys including myself on a summer-long odyssey across America. Shenandoah National Park and an opportunity to refresh ourselves in Staunton provided a unique opportunity to take in the wondrous beauty of the Valley of Virginia. Today many of my distant friends ask me to describe the charm and gorgeous nature of this enchanted region, but until now it has been impossible to provide them with a full picture of this realm. Luckily we now have an exquisite volume, *Oh, Shenandoah: Paintings of the Historic Valley and River* featuring the magnificent work of renowned artist Andrei Kushnir. The book consists of 264 plein-air paintings by Kushnir, essays on the history and culture of the Valley, and a lengthy interview with Kushnir on the philosophy of his work.

Kushnir explains the nature of plein-air painting:

“Plein air” is a term normally used with landscape painting. It is a French expression that means painting “in the open air” or out of doors and it is distinct from studio painting, which is performed in a more controlled environment. Plein air is the most direct form of painting, in that the artist attempts to capture a specific subject during a limited amount of time. Thus, plein air paintings tend to be more spontaneous and rely on the artist’s knowledge of fleeting light, conventions of effective design, and quick execution of the painting in one session. Before photography, making a sketch on site, including color notes, was the only way an artist could, more or less, accurately capture a scene. Contemporary plein air paintings are often considered finished works, rather than studies.(57)

Kushnir’s paintings capture the natural beauty of the Valley perhaps better than most photographs can. He demonstrates a deep feeling of love for nature, which is evoked in the rich flavor of his art. There are dozens of scenes of mountains, rivers, gardens, and so much more. Kushnir also has a sharp eye for the wonders created by man—historic buildings, covered bridges, college campuses, downtown streets of ancient villages, and the like. Staunton and Augusta County are well represented here. There are paintings of the Stonewall Jackson Hotel, a view of downtown Staunton from the train yard, the Blackfriars theatre, a piece of Beverley Street, the Woodrow Wilson birthplace, scenes from the Frontier Museum, Augusta Farm Cooperative, and views of parks and the Mary Baldwin campus.

I deeply appreciate the organization of the book. There are three portfolio tours: Harper’s Ferry to Lexington along U.S. 340; Williamsport to Lexington along U.S. 11 with a long stop in Staunton; and Woodstock to Lexington along VA 42 and 252. Another lengthy section gives us dramatic views of the natural landscape of the Valley and a closing section on the cultural landscape, which combines essays on such topics as education, transportation, Indian Inheritance, Religion, and Recreation and Sports with representative paintings of such places as historic ball fields, old churches, and even the unique architecture of the Temple House of Israel in Staunton.

This work is far more than a coffee table book for quick casual looking. Essays by such historians and scholars as Edward L. Ayers, Warren R. Hofstra, William M. S. Rasmussen and Dana Hand Evans reflect deeply on the rich history and complex cultures of the Valley. These surprisingly lengthy essays could well stand alone as a tome on the complex development of the Valley since the eighteenth century.

Andrei Kushnir is himself a renowned artist of the plein air school. He has painted many regions of the United States from coastal Maine to the dry lands of New Mexico and Arizona and he has gone to far away New Zealand. One can find his art in many museums both in the U.S. and abroad including the Corcoran Gallery of Art, the Hirshorn Museum and the National Gallery of Art. I invite the reader to spend a long afternoon or evening absorbing this magnificent work.

Gordon Barlow, *Augusta County: Virginia's Western Frontier*. Bridgewater, Va.: Published by Author 2018. 117 pp. ISBN: 978-1-934368-44-2 \$35.

For more than fifty years Gordon Barlow and his wife Margie Barlow have shared a passion for studying colonial Virginia history and collecting a huge number of colonial artifacts, many of them from Augusta County and other sectors along the colonial frontier.

Gordon Barlow's recent book, *Augusta County: Virginia's Western Frontier*, is a narrative history of the region that became Augusta County in the 1700s. He starts with the Ice Age in Virginia and the arrival of the first Native Americans. He discusses those first Virginians during the Paleo, Archaic, and Woodland periods. Barlow gives credence to the brief visit of Vikings into what is now Virginia over a thousand years ago as well as Jesuit missionaries who came to eastern Virginia in the sixteenth century. The rest of the book is a more detailed history of Augusta County from its founding in 1745 through the American Revolution. The author provides extensive artist sketches associated with Virginia culture and historic events to provide the reader with a visual association of the region's history.

The real value of Barlow's book, however, is the array of beautiful color photographs of artifacts that the author and his wife have collected, found, and viewed from other collectors. The Barlow collection is truly amazing. He opens the book with a stone Clovis point and scrapper dating back c. 10,000-15,000 BCE. There are stone knives, stone pipes, a bird bone necklace and a trove of other artifacts, many of them found in the area surrounding Staunton. There are photographs of ancient Indian baskets, knives, and earrings. We see a Viking bracelet excavated along the James River in Williamsburg, a Jesuit teaching plate made of copper found on Buffalo Branch in Augusta County, and much more. There are many more artifacts dating from the start of the English period that began in the early 1600s including rifles, an amazing sun dial, powder horns, tomahawks, a rifleman's compass-sundial, bullet molds, and the like.

The pictures of artifacts are beautifully laid out throughout the text. The photography of these items allows the reader to deeply appreciate the ingenuity and creativity of the Native Americans and the early European settlers who came to Augusta County and elsewhere in a Virginia that once stretched to the Mississippi River. Because many of these artifacts remain behind closed doors for safekeeping, Barlow's very beautifully illustrated books allows us to examine them up close while savoring their beauty. Gordon Barlow has performed a wonderful public service with the publication of this exquisite book.

William J. Miller, *Decision at Tom's Brook: George Custer, Thomas Rosser and the Joy of the Fight*. El Dorado Hills, Calif.: Savas Beatie, 2016. ISBN: 978-1-61121-308-9. 268 pp. \$29.95

William J. Miller, a respected Civil War historian and a former editor of the *Civil War Magazine*, has produced a detailed analysis of the decisive cavalry battle of Tom's Brook that turned the tide of the war in the Shenandoah Valley and set the stage for the Battle of Cedar Creek. Tom's Brook featured a calculated struggle between two determined young cavalry officers, General George Custer for the Union and General Thomas Rosser for the Confederacy.

During the summer and fall of 1864 General Grant, who was beginning his final push against General Lee near Richmond, ordered Major General Philip Sheridan to invade the Shenandoah Valley, the "bread-basket of the Confederacy." One goal was to force the Confederacy to keep an army in the Valley led by General Jubal Early when Lee needed all available manpower to defend Richmond. Sheridan's forces imposed a wave of destruction, burning barns and food products such as wheat and killing livestock in a successful effort to prevent these goods getting to Lee's army. Confederate forces seeking revenge killed dozens of Union soldiers who had been taken prisoner.

The battle of Tom's Brook, which ended with a complete Union victory on 9 October 1864, was a hit-and-run struggle between Custer's Union forces and Rosser's Confederates. Sheridan had ordered Custer's cavalry to "whip" the enemy or get whipped themselves. Until that battle Confederate cavalry units had dominated their Union counterparts, but Custer's force turned the tide. Rosser's men had been harassing Federal forces, but when the Union cavalry met Rosser head on, the Confederates were decimated. Survivors of the Union onslaught eventually fled in a hasty retreat to Confederate lines, which victorious Union forces sarcastically called the "Woodstock Races." The Union victory was a disaster for the Confederate cavalry, which never could recover.

Miller's narrative centers on Generals Custer and Rosser. They had been friends and classmates at West Point. Neither were very good students, but their boisterous behavior and strong self-confidence that bordered on narcissism made them stand out as members of the class of 1861. Both quickly rose through the ranks in their respective armies to positions of prominence. Miller shows the dark sides of both men but feels that they performed well when called on to lead their respective forces at Tom's Brook.

Miller says the following about Custer:

Despite Custer's gifts as a combat leader, his personal shortcomings would bedevil him even after he put a general's stars on his shoulders. In the Valley in 1864, however, Custer was the right man in the right place. Circumstances there allowed the brightness of his gifts to obscure the unsightly flaws that would later work their way into view. He loved battle and craved victory so earnestly and ardently that his fervor infected those around him. Beneath his look-at-me exterior was

a leader with extraordinary inspirational powers, which he would demonstrate after receiving another promotion and a new assignment at the beginning of October.(27)

Rosser, on the other hand, had a tempestuous nature and was overconfident when it came to extolling his virtues. He was unable to take criticism and when things he was doing went badly, he always placed the blame for failure on others. But despite these faults, General Lee stated that Rosser was “an excellent officer in the field, who is prompt, cool and fearless.”(43)

Miller is at his best when he looks at the personalities of the major figures involved in the 1864 Valley campaign. His positive portrait of Custer, for example, runs contrary to those condemnatory descriptions of the man killed at Little Big Horn. The chapter on Sheridan’s army and the burning of barns and food supplies in the Valley and Confederates’ desperate attempts at revenge is also excellent. Unfortunately, Miller loses his reader with page after page of narrative information about every maneuver in this small battle and yet there is no analysis of how this battle contributed to the Union victory a week or so later at Cedar Creek. The research and writing are fine, just too much battle maneuvering.

Hugh B. Sproul III, *Glenmore Hunt: The First Thirty Years*. Published Privately in Staunton Va., 2016. 55pp.

Fox hunting is a time-honored tradition, especially in Virginia’s countryside. There’s the thrill of the chase, the wide open fields, diverse terrain, and the feeling of community with others on the hunt. The history of fox hunting, which originated in Great Britain and Ireland, was brought to Virginia at a very early date and continues to have many adherents despite a growing decline in the sport in recent decades. The hunt involves a party-like atmosphere, a gathering of horsemen, a pack of hounds, and the hunt itself. The “hunts” often occur in the autumn and are organized and run by established hunt clubs.

Hunt clubs have a long and honored tradition in Virginia and the Glenmore Hunt Club, long centered in Staunton and neighboring areas of Augusta County, is no exception. Glenmore is one of the oldest of the 169 Recognized and Registered Hunts in the United States. It was first organized in Staunton in February 1930 in the office of the Erskine Company in Staunton and received recognition from the Masters of Foxhounds Association in 1935. The club is named for the Glenmore Farm, which was owned by its first Master of Foxhounds, John W. “Jack” Todd. There were thirty-two charter members at the formation of the club. The club’s stated purpose is “to enjoy the sport of organized fox hunting, social occasions which are appropriate to the sport, and just to get together and have a good time with friends.”

The author, Col. Hugh B. Sproul III, grew up as a fox hunter, and began fox hunting at age eight. At age fifteen he was a “whipper-in” to his father, who was the huntsman and Master of Foxhounds of the Glenmore Hunt. He hunted regularly through his college years at W&L before joining the regular army. After retiring from the military he retired to Staunton where he resumed hunting for many years.

Sproul's book is a loose compendium of Glenmore's activities, members, social events from the early 1930s through the 1960s. The text is sprinkled with many photographs of huntsmen dressed in formal attire. There are stories of particular hunts, colorful characters, parties and other club traditions. One longer story focuses on Hugh B Sproul, a businessman in Staunton, president of the Erskine Company, and a community leader. He built his dream house on a farm, Brae Burn, which was a retail dairy and commercial draft horse operation. The Sproul family including its many children were very active in Glenmore activities through the 1930s.

This short colorful book will be of major interest to hunt club members and historians of hunt clubs and fox hunting in Virginia.

William B. Pittard, *Once Upon A Ridge: A Family Memoir*. Bloomington Indiana: iUniverse, 2016. 108 pp. ISBN: 978-1-4917-9243-8. \$12.95

The Shenandoah Valley and its surrounding mountains offer numerous locales of outstanding beauty. The author of this slim volume, William B. Pittard III, a physician and professor of medicine, is especially entranced with Supin Lick Mountain in Rockingham County, Virginia. Back in the early 1970s when he and his wife Judy were young recently-married graduate students at the University of Virginia, they dreamed of buying a piece of land on a mountain with a small cabin and some spectacular views. Following the advice of friends and realtors they drove over the Blue Ridge into the Valley of Virginia and up to the northwestern corner of Rockingham County. They drove up a dirt road on Supin Lick Mountain and in due course found a parcel of affordable land with a cabin that more than met their needs. For the next few decades they and their growing brood of children made Supin Lick Mountain their home away from home, a place where they could relax and reconnect as a family.

This work is a reflection of what such a retreat can have for people otherwise pursuing busy professional lives. Pittard writes:

Today, Supin Lick Mountain remains unspoiled and pristine.

It is crisscrossed by gravel-dirt roads canopied by large trees and offers spectacular views of flora and fauna. The setting is a place to meditate, listen to the birds, be aware of God's presence, and trade daily stress for peace of mind (ix).

This is a family memoir focusing on the opportunity for individual and family enrichment that the Pittard family has experienced in their cabin and land on Supin Lick Mountain. Pittard highlights the great beauty of the land, its lively wildlife, and the friendships they have developed with the mountain's more permanent residents. We learn how they bought the land, modernized their cabin, and became happy members of a close and clannish community. We also get a good synopsis of the history of the region and of families that have lived on the mountain for many generations.

There are times when the author gets too involved in the specifics of

buying and modernizing the cabin or growing his family, but that is a risk you take when you publish what is essentially a family memoir. But at the same time one finds shades of Henry David Thoreau in the author's appreciation of the beauty and majesty of nature. Sometimes I take the beauty of this part of Virginia for granted and it's good to have writers like Pittard to wake us up and rejoice at the splendor that does surround us.

Books of General Historical Interest

David McCullough, *The Wright Brothers*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2016. 336 pp. ISBN: 978-1476728759. \$17

Once when asked how one might succeed in life, Wilbur Wright replied, "I would say to him, pick out a good father and mother, and begin life in Ohio." This clear sense of American pragmatism permeates David McCullough's dry yet fascinating biography of two unsung brothers who did more to change our lives and to advance science than practically any other persons.

Flight had always been a dream of mankind, but just how to lift heavy human cargo into the air and carry it some distance without the aid of forces like wind was something nobody could solve until the Wright brothers flew their first plane a few hundred feet at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, in December 1903. What makes their achievement even more remarkable is that a number of reputable scientists at that time were busy proclaiming that human flight was a foolish pipe dream that could never be achieved.

McCullough leads us to believe that there was nothing extraordinary about the upbringing of the two brothers, Wilbur Wright (1867-1912) and Orville Wright (1871-1948). The author begins the story with a detailed discussion of their youth in a stable home in Dayton, Ohio, in the late nineteenth century. The boys and their younger sister Katherine (Katie) had very calm and stable lives with two loving parents who encouraged their children to follow their dreams, to read and educate themselves in directions that interested them, and who preached the idea of family closeness. Their mother died of tuberculosis in 1889 and their father, an itinerant preacher and church leader, provided the barest of incomes to keep the household running. The result was that the three young ones had to band together to survive.

The two brothers were extremely close. They always worked, ate, talked and spent time with each other. People remarked that they were inseparable, like two beating hearts in one body. Wilbur exhibited the most potential and there was talk of his winning an athletic scholarship to go to Yale, but this dream collapsed after a hockey accident left the boy with a badly broken jaw and many broken teeth.

Neither boy attended college, but they continued their own program of self-education with a focus on engineering. They read voraciously, but also realized as young teens that they would have to find ways to help support their family. They soon exhibited their mechanical genius starting up a successful print shop and then a bicycle shop where they made their own superbly constructed bikes to meet the biking craze hitting America at that time. The bike

shop allowed them the income and know-how to begin thinking about the question of human flight. It is interesting to note that the brothers eventually built their flying machines from scratch without any outside help and financed their work out of their own pockets.

Deep down both Wrights were fascinated with the field of aeronautics. Dreams of flight were kindled by reading works by Otto Lilienthal and other writers in this field. They also studied the ways that birds flew to learn their secrets. Wilbur wrote many letters to experts such as aged civil engineer Octave Chanute and the Smithsonian Institution to gain further advice. They became fascinated with gliders and sought advice as to a good open spot with plenty of wind where they might experiment with them. They soon determined that the coastal area around Kitty Hawk would be best.

Starting in 1900 they spent several months of each year experimenting with a variety of gliders, focusing on the best form of wing-warming methods. Their greatest breakthrough was their invention of three-axis control which enabled a pilot to steer an aircraft effectively and to maintain its equilibrium. They gradually perfected their gliders and then in 1902-1903 built their own gas powered engine and propellers that they also designed with care. Their first successful flight of a few hundred feet took place in a cold wind in December 1903.

The Wrights then returned to Ohio and continued their work and experiments on a field outside of Dayton where they developed stronger planes and more efficient engines. Soon they were flying greater distances for longer times and making efficient maneuvers in steering their plane. What is interesting is how little public attention they received at first. Even the local Dayton newspaper refused to cover the story saying that their work was a pathetic hoax and that human flight was impossible. It was only in 1907-1908 that their work began attracting some serious attention.

What struck me the reader was the dedication and hard work that the Wrights put into their project. Their whole lives revolved around work. Neither had time or energy for fun, a romance, children or anything else. They were stubborn workaholics who overcame a lack of a college education and formal technical training to achieve one of the greatest scientific break-throughs in human history. They had no financial backers or "friends in high places." They were, as McCullough notes, intelligent young men obsessed by a dream that they were determined to make a reality.

I have read many books by McCullough including his work on John Adams and the Brooklyn Bridge. He is a brilliant easy to read popular historian. His books handle interesting topics and are very well researched. Reading about the Wrights is a delightful experience.

Charles Rappleye, *Herbert Hoover in the White House: The Ordeal of the Presidency*. New York and London: Simon & Schuster, 2016. 555pp. ISBN: 978-1-4516-4867-6. \$32.50

When growing up in New York in a world full of liberal academics who worshipped Franklin D. Roosevelt as a virtual deity, I learned that Herbert Hoover, whose presidency (1929-1933) saw the start of the Great Depression, was an uncaring, incompetent, “cold fish” who did little to rescue the United States from economic collapse and that it was the heroic efforts of FDR who saved the day. It takes reading popular historian Charles Rappleye’s well-researched, fair-handed, and somewhat sympathetic look at Hoover’s brief time in the White House to get a better perspective.

Herbert Hoover (1874-1964) had strong credentials as a leading humanitarian when he reluctantly campaigned for the presidency in 1928. He was a self-made businessman and engineer who had lived extensively abroad as a young man including some time in China. He won the gratitude of millions in Europe as head of the post-World War I Belgium Relief program. Democrats talked of a Hoover-FDR ticket in 1920, but it was not to be. He served for eight years as secretary of commerce under the Harding-Coolidge presidencies. His background as a successful businessman, engineer and problem-solver propelled him to a landslide victory over New York governor Al Smith in 1928. His great victory seemed to usher in a feeling of great optimism. Hoover himself crowed: “We in America are nearer to the final triumph over poverty than ever before in the history of any land. The poorhouse is vanishing from among us.”

Despite these glamorous thoughts, Hoover in early 1929 became deeply concerned about a global agricultural recession and the wild speculation on Wall Street. But when the stock market collapsed, banks and many business closed, and unemployment soared soon thereafter, Hoover proclaimed that it was not the job of government to engage in poor relief. He gathered leading businessmen together in Washington and urged them to not reduce wages and to invest in new industries. The job of government was to bring business leaders together and to coordinate their activities and not to foster government intervention. Keeping a balanced budget and not raising taxes were key priorities.

The public perception since the Depression has been that Hoover showed an indifference to public suffering, even at one point rejecting a \$60 million drought relief program that would have “defended the notion of volunteer aid and private relief as America’s core mode of emergency response.” But, as Rappleye notes, Hoover did make some moves that were amplified by FDR starting in 1933. Hoover initiated some programs to better involve the Federal Reserve in encourage banks to further extend credit (banks refused to cooperate), to expand public works, and to use the Reconstruction Finance Corporation to direct loans to major business to keep them afloat. But despite these modest efforts, the depression continued to worsen: unemployment soared, banks kept closing, credit was unavailable, and hunger marchers and the Bonus Army were forcibly evicted from Washington. Despite his efforts, by 1932 Hoover had become one of the most hated men in America.

Rappleye provides a careful sympathetic view of Hoover as a quiet, shy man with a strong family and high moral values who needed time to be alone while fishing. He cared deeply about the suffering of his countrymen, had some good ideas, but lacked the strength of character and the vision to embark on challenging new programs to be a successful president amidst the crisis of the 1930s. His dogged determination to keep the U.S. on the gold standard was no help. All in all, Hoover was a man in over his head as president.

Rappleye, a successful popular historian, has produced one of the better biographies of Hoover. There is good clear writing and research, though at times the author bogs the reader down with long essays on banking and the like. A good though rather dry read.

Cokie Roberts, *Capital Dames: The Civil War and the Women of Washington, 1848-1868*. New York: Harper Collins, 2015. 492 pp. ISBN: 978-0-06-200276-1 \$27.99

Several years ago political commentator and best-selling author Cokie Roberts came to Staunton to deliver a series of lectures at Mary Baldwin College. Her main theme was that while men have played a dominant role in shaping American history, women often play important roles that are far too often overlooked by historians. She develops this theme in her 2008 book, *Ladies of Liberty: The Women Who Shaped Our Nation* and now in her most recent publication, *Capital Dames: The Civil War and the Women of Washington, 1848-1868*.

Roberts in *Capital Dames* carefully assesses the contributions made by twenty-seven activist women who were at some juncture part of the scene in Washington, D.C., either before, during, or just after the Civil War. At the start of the sesquicentennial of the Civil War in 2011 she remembered that "I started wondering whether that horrific conflict had a similar impact on American women." So much attention is devoted to the roles played by leading men like Generals Grant and Lee, but there is very little commentary on women. Roberts spent several years reading diaries, newspapers, government records and much more and has come up with some startling finds.

Some of the women included in this detailed study include Clara Barton, Dorothea Dix, Mary Todd Lincoln and her seamstress Elizabeth Keckley, and Varina Davis, wife of Jefferson Davis. Roberts also takes a look at the thousands of other women whose lives were directly affected by the massive changes in American society brought on by the war. The size of government grew rapidly because of the added pressures produced by the war, but the presence of so many men in the military created a massive job shortage that could only be filled by women. Women took on new roles such as nursing in hospitals and working in social service and relief agencies. There were now jobs for women in the post office and in the Treasury Department where U.S. Treasurer Francis Spinner declared that "a woman can use scissors better than a man." Women, of course, were paid far lower salaries than men for the same level of work, but this was still a major breakthrough. Very few and sometimes no women had ever been employed by government agencies before the war, but the war opened the gates for the employment of women as government workers.

The South also used women in a variety of different roles including working as spies in Washington to gather information from government officials and pass it on to Confederates in Richmond. One of these female spies learned the exact date and time that Union troops would attack Confederates near Bull Run in July 1861 thus allowing Confederate generals time to bring in more troops to better counter Union forces.

The most interesting parts of the book are Roberts' analysis of the contributions of Dorothea Dix, Clara Barton, and Varina Davis. Dix came to Washington to provide advice on sanitation and to organize a badly-needed corps of female nurses. Clara Barton applied her nursing skills throughout the war to both Union and captured Confederate troops and established numerous nursing stations wherever the Union army went. Both Dix and Barton won much deserved praise for their efforts. Davis obtained the respect and the sympathy of both North and South through her strenuous efforts to better the conditions of her husband who was jailed in Fort Monroe in Virginia after his capture. Roberts' description of Mary Todd Lincoln is a bit harsh, but her violent temper and rapid changes of mood made life very exasperating for those around her.

I was most startled to learn that abolitionist and suffragist orator Anna Dickinson wowed a crowd in the House of Representatives, the first time that a woman had spoken there. Overall, Roberts suggests that the war did much to advance the cause of women's rights. It was never an easy path and many women suffered for their audacious activities, but now women were coming out of the kitchen and were beginning to play far more active and responsible roles in the political and social life of the nation. The Civil War, Roberts notes, advanced the cause of women's rights by at least fifty years. The war also led to the rapid growth of the women's suffrage movement.

Roberts writes in a clear crisp manner. She is a fine story teller and the depth of her research gives her a fine tale to spin.

John Strausbaugh, *City of Sedition: The History of New York City During the Civil War*. New York: Twelve Books, 2016. 423 pp. ISBN: 978-1-4555-8418-5. \$30

Historian John Strausbaugh is a prolific scholar who has devoted much of his professional career to writing about the social, economic and political history of New York City. Recent works include his in-depth study of Greenwich Village and now his masterpiece, *City of Sedition, about New York before and during the Civil War*.

New York was already the financial capital of the United States when the news of the attack on Fort Sumter arrived in April, 1861. The news received a very mixed reaction in the city. There was a wave of patriotism as demonstrators rioted in the streets and many young men ran to join the military in response to President Lincoln's call for volunteers to help put down the rebellion.

The business community, however, was in a state of shock. The potential

for a long war promised to deeply cut back if not totally eliminate two major sources of business and income related to the South: cotton and slaves. By 1860 cotton represented “a whopping forty percent of all the goods shipped out of the port of New York.” The South depended on New York bankers to finance the expansion of cotton. Southern plantation owners were often deeply in debt to the New York banks as they expanded their areas for growing cotton further west. At this time the United States exported two-thirds of the world’s cotton. Because there were relatively few cotton mills in the South, southern planters had to ship their cotton north to New York for processing or distribution to northern mills or across the Atlantic to Europe. The slave trade also prospered in New York until the start of the Civil War. Although there had been a federal ban on slave-running since 1820, it was a very open secret that the practice continued illegally and that New York was the North’s major slaving port—a fact that brought enormous profits and little risk to those involved in the trade. Fortunately for the city, the need for manufacturing to support the war effort brought prosperity during much of the war.

New York politics has always had a rough and tumble reputation, and the Civil War era was no exception. The newly-formed Republican Party made rapid gains in the city, but the long-established Democratic Party, largely but not entirely controlled by Tammany Hall, included many sympathizers with the South who despised the abolitionists and supported the move for a peaceful accommodation with the South. Although Abraham Lincoln did very well outside of New York City in winning the state, he did badly in the city in both 1860 and 1864. When in 1863 the federal government announced plans to draft citizens into the army, there was an armed uprising and prolonged rioting across the city with many fatalities. Throughout the war the city was the strongest base of antiwar “Copperheads” and a haven for deserters and draft dodgers.

Newspaper editor and publisher Horace Greeley was a powerful voice in favor of abolition and in supporting the war, but other New York newspapers would be among the most racist and antiwar in the country. There were times when these antiwar papers crossed the line in terms of libel and in opposing the war effort and found themselves shut down by the government. A few editors would call their readers to revolt and commit treason.

There was also a struggle for employment and acceptable living conditions among the large free black population and poor immigrants, particularly the Irish. Traditionally, free blacks had dominated jobs dealing with shipping and harbor operations, but the heavy flood of unemployed Irish in the 1850s led to animosity and even some bitter rioting among various groups for better employment.

Strausbaugh has written another masterpiece. New York is so complex with so many contradictions, but somehow he manages to put it all together. It helps to have individual chapters about some of the major New Yorkers of the era including Greeley and Boss Tweed. The book is clearly and well written

and brilliantly researched. The careful reader will come away with a strong understanding of the rough and tumble of life in this highly energized city.

Geoffrey Cowan, *Let the People Rule: Theodore Roosevelt and the Birth of the Presidential Primary*. New York: W. W. Norton & Company, 2016. ISBN: 978-0-393-24984-2. 404 pp. \$27.95

Geoffrey Cowen, a communications professor at the University of Southern California and the best-selling author of *The People v. Clarence Darrow*, has written a fascinating history of the 1912 battle fought among Theodore Roosevelt, William Howard Taft, and Robert La Follette for the Republican nomination for President, which gave birth to the first meaningful presidential primary.

Cowan's work covers the campaign day by day from the time that Roosevelt decided to challenge his chosen successor for the Republican nomination. Cowan gives us a front-row seat to the wheeler-dealers, the corrupt bargains, and the political intrigue that lie at the heart of any national campaign. Roosevelt posed himself as the champion of the people. Knowing that his former presidency and his increasingly radical political views had made him immensely unpopular with GOP party bosses, Roosevelt stressed the need for presidential preference primaries and persuaded a number of states to adopt the primary system.

Roosevelt campaigned hard in those states that had primaries and won most of them. He went to the Republican convention that summer declaring that because of his primary victories he was clearly the people's choice. Unfortunately, the system of primaries was very new and the power of political bosses and machines was too great. The party hierarchy may not have been very fond of Taft, but they certainly preferred him to TR. They controlled the seating of delegates at the convention and when there were rival slates of delegates from any one state, the pro-Taft forces always won.

Cowan suspects that TR knew very well that he could not wrestle away the GOP nomination from Taft and that his ultimate goal was always a planned break from the Republican orthodoxy. He suggests that TR's campaigning and his championing of the "people" was an effort to win public attention and support. However, he challenges TR, labeling him a hypocrite because of his support to exclude black delegations from the Deep South states. We also get to know TR as a pragmatic politician ready to make compromises and to partake in political intrigues to advance his status as a candidate. The Roosevelt we meet here is a hardened politician and hardly the idealist that he portrayed of himself.

Cowan's portrait of Roosevelt is the key feature of the book, but we also get intimate portraits of other political leaders of the day. The most interesting of these folks is Robert La Follette, the famous progressive senator from Wisconsin. La Follette felt that he was the true progressive leader of the Republicans and declared that TR was nothing more than a political opportunist

and “Johnny come lately” who adopted the mantle of a progressive when, in fact, La Follette was the only bona fide progressive.

Cowan convinces the reader that the 1912 GOP campaign for its presidential nomination gave birth to the primary selection process that today dominates both major parties. The fact that TR so strongly stressed the need for primaries gave birth to the notion adopted years later that primaries should be a key nomination determinant.

Cowan’s book is based on extensive research in many original sources. His writing is clear and the book offers a masterful look at the 1912 campaign. A very worthwhile read.

Adam Krakowski, *Vermont Prohibition: Teetotalers, Bootleggers, and Corruption*. Charleston S.C.: The History Press, 2016. 142 pp. ISBN: 978-1-62619-930-9. \$21.99

This fine work by Adam Krakowski is a case study into why the Prohibition movement failed in the United States. There was Prohibition in Vermont decades before it was tried as a national experiment. What the author says about Vermont provides clear reasons why the Prohibition movement failed nationally and should be read by all people interested in this matter both in Vermont, Virginia, or elsewhere.

Adam Krakowski, a decorative and fine arts conservator in Quechee, Vermont, and a specialist on the history and production of beer in this state, has written a fascinating history of Vermont’s long struggle to prohibit the production, sale, and drinking of alcohol products. He concludes that “Prohibition in Vermont is a dark chapter in our history....Vermont essentially replaced one group of evils with a new set.... Vermonters exchanged public drunkenness and fervent alcoholism for rum-running and a far-reaching black market (15).”

Today Vermont is gaining fame as a major producer of craft beer and hard cider. Recently, the Hill Farmstead Brewery in Greensboro has won rave notices for its beer and other Vermont brewers have also attracted a strong following. This phenomenon, which began at the dawn of this century, is a marked contrast to the broad drive in the middle years of the nineteenth century to make Vermont a dry state. The success of this movement led to Vermont having some form of Prohibition on its books for almost eighty years between 1850 and the end of federal Prohibition in 1933.

Krakowski provides a broad history of alcohol production and consumption in Vermont. During the early settlement of the state in the late 1700s and early 1800s, many people consumed beer, cider, and spirits rather than water because much of the water supply was contaminated with bacteria. Taverns were the center of many communities and most towns had at least one or two distilleries. The growth of alcohol production and consumption ignited a movement by citizens of many towns to curb the use of alcohol. Various temperance groups formed in the 1820s and by the 1830s were petitioning the legislature to end liquor sales.

These efforts eventually found fruition in the 1850s when a series of

anti-liquor laws passed the legislature effectively banning the licensing of alcohol for beverage purposes and banning its manufacture. The major problem, however, was enforcement of these laws, which became “a dark spot in the state’s history, not because of the raids and arrests made, but because of how corrupt it was. Many upstanding citizens and families had their names tarnished over infractions of the law under questionable proceedings. Vermont was so saturated with alcohol during state prohibition that one can only wonder what effect the law really had.”(67)

Resistance to state prohibition came in many different forms. Krakowski cites the example of Hardwick, Vermont, a major center of granite quarries that employed many Italian workers. Many of the men died from silicosis, a lung disease that stemmed from breathing in granite dust. To support their families, many widows turned their homes and living rooms into cafes, serving their cooking and often wines and spirits in an effort to try and survive. Court dockets in the late 1800s in Caledonia County (and in Washington County and its granite quarries in Barre) featured many Italian women who were cited to appear for violation of the Liquor Law.

Public attitudes toward Prohibition in Vermont shifted to an extent that in 1902 the liquor law shifted to local option, meaning that towns could still opt to forbid sales. The enactment of federal Prohibition, however, between 1920 and 1933 brought about a new enforcement crisis as “rum runners” crossed a very porous border with Canada with relative ease.

Krakowski concludes by noting that the eighty years between the enactment of liquor laws in the 1850s and the repeal of the Volstead act brought on a fifty-year period of hesitation before breweries and distilleries in the state recommenced operations. These brewers and distillers had to follow their own instincts because prohibition had “effectively prevented any knowledge from being passed down. Thankfully, the state has been able to shake off the shackles of prohibition and create a vibrant artisan alcohol industry, finally bringing revenue back to the state.” (111)

Krakowski’s *Vermont Prohibition* brings to light both Vermont’s and this nation’s long struggle to prohibit the manufacture and consumption of alcohol. Much has been written about rum-running in Vermont during the 1920s, but many people, myself included, have no idea that Prohibition was a failed idea in Vermont long before the Volstead Act. Krakowski’s research is fine and his writing is clear. His appendix inclusion of various cocktail recipes might amuse some readers. His book, however, is a very serious and hardnosed history of one of the most tumultuous period of this country’s history.

Recent Acquisitions of the Augusta County Historical Society, 2016-2017

Report by Dr. Kenneth W. Keller, ACHS Archivist

The Archives Committee of the Historical Society has accomplished much since our last report in the 2016 *Bulletin*. The members of the Committee for 2016-2017 are John Sherwood, Mack Wilson, Suzanne Fisher, Jim Hobin, Dr. Bill Blair, Pablo Theodoro, Lynne Scott, and Dr. Ken Keller. The committee has compiled a 155-page Finding Aid to the Hamrick Collection, the largest single collection of documents in the holdings of the Society. The Hamrick Collection fills seventy-eight acid-free archival boxes and the contents of the collection are now entered into PastPerfect, the computer program we use to catalog the 2,500 archival collections we have in addition to the 120 objects, 1,400 books, and thousands of photographs at ACHS. This past year, fifty researchers from a dozen states visited our offices to use the collections. We also added eighty-three new collections to our holdings. Family history remains a popular subject for researchers, but we have also had people come to examine our collection of flood maps, the Welcome Wagon Collection, documents of the African-American community of Staunton, records of the Augusta Bird Club, photographs of the Plecker-Wise House, the District Home collection, city directories, the early history of VSDB, the Kerr Creek massacre, and Ida Stover Eisenhower. The archives collections also provided numerous items for the exhibits shown in the History Gallery in the R.R. Smith Center. Below is a listing of these recently acquired collections, all of which are now cataloged, entered into PastPerfect and the accession register, and placed on the shelves for use. Many thanks to the following persons and institutions for donating these items to ACHS:

Nancy Sorrells, Connie J. Doebele, John N. Furniss, Edwin Beecher Brown estate, Dr. Kenneth W. Keller, Irene Wright, Ida Jeffries, M. Elizabeth Hawpe, Becky Harville, Rick Chittum, Joyce McDonald, Eleanor Supple Jamison, Harriet and John Sherwood, Fitzhugh Elder estate, Elaine Elder King, Laura Nell Obaugh, Peter Silverman, Robert Rowe, Dr. Katharine L. Brown, Marcy Molinaro, Stuarts Draft High School Library, Eve Carter, June Drumheller, Janet B. Downs, Dr. Virginia R. Francisco, James W. Brush, Augusta County Library, the Haltermann family, estate of J.B. Yount III, Lance Ritchie, James Conway, Rockbridge County Historical Society,

Albemarle County Historical Society, Don Splaun, Jr., Suzanne Fisher, Dr. Amy Tillerson, Carter Douglass, Waynesboro Public Library, Marney Gibbs, Mack Wilson, Joan Berenson, Glen Sutton and Irene Sutton, Jackson County [Illinois] Historical Society, Joyce L. Marshall, Dr. Daniel A. Metraux, and Darren Watts.

2016.0051 Civil War Books book, Charles B. Richardson's *Life of Stonewall Jackson* (1866); an undated paperbound book by W.P. Snow, *General Thomas Jonathan Jackson*

2016.0052 Hope Reborn of War book with DVD, Nancy T. Sorrells, with documentary DVD by Connie J. Doebele, *Hope Reborn of War—The Story of a World War II military hospital* (2016)

2016.0053 Furniss Photograph Collection 12 carte de visite photographs from Clinedinst Studio and Teaford Studio; photographs of young women lacking surnames; donor's note says the photographs are from the Mathews family of Virginia, Georgia, and Alabama; possible identification of family connection of subject of photographs

2016.0054 Edwin Beecher Brown Book Collection A collection of 78 books, mostly about the Civil War, from the estate of Edwin Beecher Brown, a Staunton attorney and genealogist. Collection includes: Gregg S. Clemmer, *Old Alleghany—The Life and Wars of Ed Johnson* (2004); Robert Underwood Johnson and Clarence Clough Buel, *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887; 1995), Vols. 1-4; Gregg S. Clemmer, *Old Alleghany—The Life and Wars of Ed Johnson* (2004); Robert Underwood Johnson and Clarence Clough Buel, *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* (1887; 1995), Vols. 1-4; Ethel Armes, *Stratford Hall—The Great House of the Lees* with an introduction by Franklin D. Roosevelt (1936); Douglas Southall Freeman, *Lee's Lieutenants—A Study in Command*. 3 Vols. (1943); Howard A. Hanlon, *The Ball-Shooter—From the Forests They Felled—Cities Grew* (1960). Autographed by author; T. Harry Williams, *P.G.T. Beauregard—Napoleon in Gray* (1955); William N. McDonald, *A History of the Laurel Brigade—Originally the Ashby Cavalry of the Army of Northern Virginia and Chew's Battery* (1907); *Shrapnel* (1959) [Staunton Military Academy yearbook]; George Cary Eggleston, *A Rebel's Recollections*, With a New Introduction by Gaines M. Foster (1996); Dan Beattie, *Brandy Station 1863—First Step towards Gettysburg* (2008); Chris Calkins, *The Battles of Appomattox Station and Appomattox Court House April 8-9, 1865*. 2nd edition. (1987); G. F. R. Henderson, *Stonewall Jackson and the American Civil War*. Vol 1. (1993); Robert G. Tanner, *Stonewall in the Valley—Thomas J. "Stonewall" Jackson's Shenandoah Valley Campaign, Spring 1863*, (1996); Earl J. Hess, *The Rifle Musket in Civil War Combat—Reality and Myth* (2006); Marshall M. Brice, *The Stonewall Brigade Band* (1967); J. H. Segars, *In Search of Your Confederate Ancestors*. 2nd Edition. (1993, 2005); Webb Garrison, *Civil War Curiosities—Strange Stories, Oddities, Events, and Coincidences* (1994); Marta Kastner, *Old Jack—Life of Stonewall Jackson* (1993); Gary W. Gallagher, *The Confederate War* (1997); Kent Masterson Brown, *Lee, Logistics, & the Pennsylvania Campaign* (2005); Robert K. Krick, *The Smoothbore Volley That Doomed the Confederacy. The Death of Stonewall Jackson and Other Chapters on the Army of Northern Virginia* (2002); John O. Casler, *Four Years in the Stonewall Brigade* (1994); W. Cullen Sherwood, *The Nelson Artillery Lamkin and Rives Batteries*. 1st Edition. (1991); Craig L. Symonds, *A Battlefield Atlas of the Civil*

War. 2nd Edition. (1983); Henry Kyd Douglas, *I Rode With Stonewall* (1940); Henry B. McClellan, *I Rode With Jeb Stuart—The Life and Campaigns of Major General J.E.B. Stuart* (1994); Harriet Connor Brown, *Grandmother Brown's Hundred Years 1827-1927* (1930); Charles W. Turner, Ted Barclay, *Liberty Hall Volunteers—Letters from the Stonewall Brigade* (1992); Joseph T. Glatthaar, *General Lee's Army—From Victory to Collapse* (2008); Richard M. Ketchum, Bruce Catton, *The American Heritage Picture History of the Civil War*. 2 Vols. (1960). *The American Heritage Civil War Chronology*, 1960. All volumes in slipcase; Homer Floyd Fansler, *History of Tucker County West Virginia*. (1962); Robert Bell, *The Book of Scots-Irish Family Names*. (1988); Stan Cohen and Keith Gibson. *Moses Ezekiel—Civil War Soldier, Renowned Sculptor*. Autographed by Author. (2007); Bruce Catton. *Mr. Lincoln's Army*. (1951); William W. Freehling. *The Road to Disunion*. Volume 2. *Secessionists Triumphant*. (2007); Fiske Kimball, William Graves Perry, Arthur A. Shurcliff, Susan Higginson Nash. *The Restoration of Colonial Williamsburg in Virginia*. Reprinted from *The Architectural Record*, December 1935 (1935); Oren F. Morton, *Annals of Bath County Virginia*. (1978); *The State of West Virginia*. J. Howard Myers, ed. *West Virginia Blue Book*, 1969 (1969); John J. Walklet, Jr., Thomas K. Ford. *Photographs by Taylor Lewis, Jr. A Window on Williamsburg*. Bicentennial Edition. (1975); Dee Brown, *Bury My Heart at Wounded Knee—An Indian History of the American West* (1970); Daniel W. Hollis., Carl Julien. *Look to the Rock—One Hundred Ante-bellum Presbyterian Churches of the South*. (1961); Henry Woodhead, ed. *Echoes of Glory—Illustrated Atlas of the Civil War* (1991). [This volume in one volume of a three volume set.]; John W. Wayland, *Stonewall Jackson's Way—Route, Method, Achievement* (1940); Gregory A. Coco, *Gettysburg's Confederate Dead* (2003)

A. Lawrence Kocher and Howard Dearstyne, *Colonial Williamsburg—Its Buildings and Gardens—A Study of Virginia's Restored Capital* (1949) [2 copies]; James L. Haley, *Apaches—A History and Culture Portrait* (1981); James R. Arnold, Roberta Wiener, Paul Kincaid, C.J. Davies. *The Timechart of the Civil War* (2001); David B. Scherman et al., *The Best of Life* [magazine] (1973); Richard Pratt, *A Treasury of Early American Homes*. (1949); George B. Davis, Leslie J. Perry, Joseph W. Kirkley, et al. *The Official Military Atlas of the Civil War* (1983) [reprint of Atlas to Accompany the Official Records of the Union and Confederate Armies, 1891-1895].

2016.0055 Valley Turnpike Seal Button A black and white metal button with pin, ca. 2000, with seal of the Valley Turnpike Company; the button was distributed at a historical conference about the Great Valley Road

2017.0001 Election Posters, Bumper Stickers, Literature, and Yard Signs A collection of political signs and printed matter from elections from 1960 to 2016 used at the exhibit "The Verdict of the People", November 2016-January 2017, displayed in the historical gallery at the R.R. Smith Center

2017.0002 Woodrow Wilson Rehabilitation Center Collection 20 folders of papers and books from the Society publication of the book *Hope Reborn of War*; 3 cards advertising the book; photocopies of federal court cases of eminent domain for land that eventually became land for the Woodrow Wilson General Hospital; a *Hornet's Nest Yearbook*, 1948, from Wilson Memorial High School, Fishersville, Va. [first graduating class]; book, *In the Company of Heroes*; Evans Cook memoir; Center Post 165 newsletter; drawing of Dr. Ray M. Hoover; photo of class, unidentified; clippings, 1972-1973; 2 cds of an Army bed and cot; 4 8 inch x 10 inch

photographs of Army nurses; print of Woodrow Wilson Hospital; photocopy of map of WWGH; book, Thank You God for Keeping Me Here; Woodrow Wilson Rehabilitation Center Foundation Internal Case Statement

2017.0003 Irene Wright Newspaper Collection Newspaper clippings, including *Staunton Spectator*, May 30, 1894; article, *The Bronze Star*, *Evening Leader*, February 19, 1945; map of Augusta County, Staunton, Waynesboro with advertising [pre-Interstate] *Staunton News-Leader*, March 23, 1930 [issue has history of Augusta County]; *Evening Leader*, April 12, 1945 [FDR death]; August 15, 1945 [Japanese surrender]; the *Leader* papers, Victory in Europe Edition [advertising supplement, May 1945; *Evening Leader* May 7, 1945 [Nazis surrender]; *Staunton Leader*, October 28, 1960 [Eisenhower visit to Staunton]

2017.0004 Nancy Sorrells Book Collection Lawrence R. Piper, *A Primer for Local Historical Societies*, Second Edition [American Association for State and Local History, Nashville, TN; Time-Life Books, *Illustrated Atlas of the Civil War* (1991); *Guide to Genealogical Research in the National Archives*, National Archives Trust Fund Board, Washington, D.C. (1983); booklet, *Glenmore Hunt, The First Thirty Years 1930-1960*; booklet, *History of the Woodrow Wilson District of the Ruritan National*, Wallace Kennedy, district governor (1972); book, Andrei Kashir, *Oh, Shenandoah*, George F. Thompson Publishing, (undated)

2017.0005 Tom Jeffries Collection Four Blakemore photographs of unidentified people; Picture postcard of "The Willow Spout," Mt. Sidney, Virginia; Picture postcard of the "New School House, Being Completed," Weyers Cave, Virginia; Happy Birthday USA program from July 3 & 4 July, 1994; Newspaper photograph of the stone bridge built in 1874 for the Valley Railroad published by the *Daily News Leader*, dated November 5, 1988; Photograph of the same picture; Section E of the *News Leader*, dated February 22, 2015, featuring "The Statler Brothers 50 Years Later," as well as other historical facts. Three sheets of school photographs showing 137 students possibly from Beverley Manor—1923. The photographs are named.

2017.0006 Pewter Mary Baldwin College Plate 7-inch in diameter pewter Mary Baldwin College plate, manufactured in West Columbia, Pa. In 2016 Mary Baldwin College changed its name to Mary Baldwin University.

2017.0007 Ida Jeffries Collection 4 Blakemore photographs, unidentified persons; 2 postcards: Willow Spout, Weyers Cave High School building; program, Happy Birthday U.S.A. July 3-4, 1994, Gypsy Hill Park, 25th Anniversary; newspaper clipping, photograph of 1874 Valley Railroad/B & O Bridge over Folly Creek; daily plan sheet, school classes with names of students and photographs, unidentified school; *News Leader* article, "Statler Brothers 50 Years Later," February 22, 2005

2017.0008 Hamrick Collection Finding Aid spiral bound book; finding aid for the 28 series of the Hamrick Collection. The finding aid was prepared by the Archives Committee of the Society and the Archivist, Dr. Ken Keller; The finding aid is 155 pages long and describes the collections to and including the folder level.

2017.0009 M. Elizabeth Hawpe Collection 5 standard size Hollinger boxes containing 30 folders of local history articles, books, genealogy files, and photographs. The files mostly pertain to the Hawpe, Steele, Waddell, Burwell, Carter, Shultz, and Doak families. These families were mostly in southern Augusta County (Greenville area) and Staunton as well as some in Albemarle. Of note are several Mary Baldwin items. Included is a very large Hawpe family Bible with and unsigned Temperance Pledge but with a table of family genealogical infor-

mation. CDs scanned copies of many of the photographs and other items in the collection. All copies are backed up on the CD. One page of notes from Nancy Sorrells to Ken Keller dated February 25, 2017, generally describing the contents of the collection. Included are Stuart Hall and Mary Baldwin College commencement invitations; Mary Baldwin Seminary report card for Julia Elizabeth Burwell for the months of November and December 1898; Numerous letters, notes, and scraps of paper with family names useful for genealogy; Augusta National Bank deposit book for 1928-1940; photographs and postcards; copy of *Augusta County Argus*, October 7, 1890; *The Evening Leader*, January 22, 24, 30, 1931, March 6, 1933 [Roosevelt Inauguration], March 28, 1936; the *Staunton News Leader*, January 25, 1931; partial copy of the *Staunton News Leader*, February 1, 1931; partial copy of the *Staunton News Leader*, July 9, 1935; correspondence with the names Burwell, McKee (a will), Hawpe, Brown. Flyer advertising an administrator's sale, August 22, 1894; photo of Mary Elizabeth C. Hawpe; names Burwell, Hawpe, Doak, Lilley; old newspaper clippings; postcards, obituaries, letters, certificates of service from State Farm Insurance Companies to E. T. Hawpe; Burwell receipts, cancelled checks, letters, notes dated 1849-1893; Religious Pamphlet, "The Royal Invitation" with a note that it was found near Sharpsburg, Md., battlefield on September 17, 1862. [Civil War] Numerous letters and notes most dated 1849-1917 to and from Bare family; Specimen booklet from Life Publishing Company (humorous); Two small albums belonging to Bare and Burwell women; letters with genealogical information about the Hawpe and Burwell families; genealogical notes of Lil Waddell Hawpe, Ft. Defiance, Va.; Hawpe genealogy, Doak genealogy; copy of map of Augusta County, Va., dated 1865; numerous newspaper articles; obituary for Mary Doak Hawpe from the *Daily News Leader*, February 23, 2017; collection of pages entitled "Home Scenes and Family Sketches, II, 1923 thru 19--" by Donald Ellis Waddell, Jr., March 1984; collection of a copy of 20 page paper titled "A Letter" written to Major J. M. McCue dated 1873; collection of 23 pages titled "'Miss Jessie, My Memories of Mother" by Yates Carr Garnott, 1992; collection of DAR genealogical information; collection of a record of the names of children baptized by the Rev. John Craig, 1740-1749, 2 copies plus an alphabetical list; copy of *Home Scenes and Family Sketches* by Joseph A. Waddell, 1900. This publication consists of 234 pages of text plus a 9 page family tree genealogy files, charts, and letters; Public High School Certificate of Distinction for Miss Julia Burwell, 1898; copy of John Craigs baptismal record, 1740-1749 (corrected against photo of original); genealogy files--*Home Scenes and Family Sketches*; excerpt from Will Book 7, pages 434-435, Augusta County Courthouse, Staunton, Va.; Albemarle Archives, Dec 1994-Jan 1995; "the Steeles of Steeles Tavern, Va., and related families; excerpts of documents from the Staunton Public Library; Information about the McLanahan family; completed DAR application for membership of Mary E. Hawpe letter to C.E. May from Lilly Waddell Hawpe, July 5, 1987, and a response dated November 9, 1917; a collection of loose foreign and domestic stamps; Pamphlet, "The Royal Houses of Stewart" published by the Scottish National Portrait Gallery, Edinburgh, 1958; photo of unidentified woman; soft copy book "Supplement to Annals of Augusta County," pages 381-460, by Joseph A. Waddell; copy of a pamphlet "Lee Chapel," Washington and Lee University, Lexington, Va. This booklet was published by W&L when the chapel was renovated in 1962-1963; copy of *Carter Family Records* by J. Montgomery Seever, published by American Historical

Genealogical Society, 200 North Broad Street, Philadelphia, Pa.; pamphlet titled "Christ Church, Lancaster County, Virginia, 1732 and the Life Around It" by Louise Belote Dawe. This booklet was published by the Foundation for Historic Christ Church, Inc., Irvington, Lancaster, Va.; pamphlet titled "Gordon Family Records" by J. Montgomery Seavers, American Historical Genealogical Society, 1415 Montgomery Avenue, Philadelphia, Pa., 1929; book, *The Germanna Record* published by the Foundation of the Germanna Colonies in Virginia, Inc., October 1971; book, *History of the Augusta Church from 1737 to 1900* by Rev. J. H. Van Devanter, pastor of the church, printed in Staunton, Va., by Ross Printing Co., 1900; collection of photos, newspaper articles and pamphlets about historical events and locations in Virginia; name index for a segment for a publication. This portion of the book, pp. 638-678, is titled *In North River Basin of Virginia*; coat of arms for "Harrison" family; official guide to the Palace of Holyrood house; extensive genealogical information for the Hawpe, Burwell, Waddell, and Alexander families; booklet, *A Register of the Descendants of the Rev. James Waddell*; book, *Antebellum Albemarle, Virginia*; photographs, registration certificate and Greenville business card; photograph and biographical sketch of Robert Doak Lilley; photographs, some of Hawpe and Waddell; [Julia?] Elizabeth Burwell photograph; book, Joseph Waddell, *History of Mary Baldwin Seminary*; book, *Historical Sketch of Lower Marsh Creek Presbyterian Church, Pa. [Adams County vicinity]*; book, *Germanna: Outpost of Adventure 1714-1956*, by John W. Wayland; miscellaneous material, the Memorial Foundation of the Germanna Colonies; Scrapbook, newspaper articles and a few letters spanning years 1935-1983; copy of *Shepp's Photographs of the World*, 1892, printed by Alfred M. Slocum & Co., Philadelphia, Pa.. The book contains 515 pages and is in poor condition; Holy Bible with Old and New Versions of the New Testament. It was presented to R. Doak Burwell by J. Burwell on July 18, 1888. This is a pictorial family Bible. It was published by B. F. Johnson & Co., Richmond, Va. and entered into the Library of Congress in 1885. Marriages, births, and deaths are listed on pages in the middle of the book. There is also a "Temperance Pledge" following the family information. There are no names signed in the Temperance Pledge. The cover and binding are in poor condition, but most of the pages are in good condition.

2017.0010 Latin Text *Justini Historiae Phillippica con Versione Anglica* A Latin school text book with inscriptions as follows "Charles Porterfield--Staunton" and "John Porterfield 1808" and "W.H. Talley Norristown" and "Junius Coiner" *Justini Historiae Phillippicae: con Versione Anglica ad verbum, quantum fieri potuit, facta: or the History of Justin with and English Translation as literal as possible*

2017.0011 Harvill-Chittum Newspaper Collection A collection of 66 nineteenth century newspapers including scattered issues of the *Staunton Spectator*, 1842-1902; *Staunton Spectator and Vindicator*, March 25, 1907; *Augusta County Argus*, scattered issues, 1892-1910; *Staunton Daily Leader*, scattered issues, 1907-1911; *Evening Leader*, scattered issues, 1917-1925; *Staunton Morning Leader*, scattered issues. 1916-1919; *Staunton News Leader*, scattered issues, 1915-1919; *Staunton News Leader*, September 8, 1922; July 29, 1926

2017.0012 McDonald Portrait and Bible Collection Two charcoal portraits on card stock, 16 inches x 20 inches, couple, unidentified; portraits found in shed in Mt. Sidney. Holy Bible, 1885 Revised Authorized Version with family genealogy pages that are not filled in; with temperance pledge with blank lines for signatures

2017.0013 World War II Ration Book War Ration Book No. 3 with stamps; signed Eleanor S. Jamison

2017.0014 Statler Brothers Program 1985 Statler Brothers Program, 1985; numerous advertisements from local businesses

2017.0015 Fitzhugh Elder Collection A collection of papers of a prominent attorney, bank president, and Episcopal vestryman from Staunton, Va. [Papers regarding his service as vestryman at Trinity Episcopal Church are on deposit in the church archives.] Collection includes: Augusta Bar Profiles; Staunton Law School typescript; typescripts about barristers and bankers; retirement dinner for Justice George Moffett Cochran; constitutions of the Augusta County Bar Association and by-laws; Augusta National Bank at time of merger with First and Merchants National Bank, Richmond (photo, 1962); sketch of history of Augusta National Bank; photocopy of financial statement, 1897; lists of attorneys who served in the military; meetings of the corporation court of city of Staunton [successor to hustings court]' judges and commonwealth attorneys, 1870-1964; history of the hustings court of Staunton; list of circuit court judges since 1964; Augusta National Bank; report to stockholders of Augusta National Bank, 1960, 1962; statements of condition of Augusta National Bank, 1943-1960; Board Minutes of Augusta National Bank, 1880-1885; merger of Virginia National Bank and First and Merchants National Bank of Richmond; Augusta National Bank papers, 1951, 1952, 1959; specimen share of stock, Augusta National Bank; clippings from the American Bank; Beverley Club; list of members, 1892; list of guests of members; clipping, John Lewis Monument, Gypsy Hill Park, 2006; typescript history of Augusta National Bank (2 copies); Augusta National Bank, statement of condition, 1962; W. P. Tams letter, typescript to J. Rodes Brown, history; typescript history of Staunton banks; typescript notes on Wayt B. Timberlake; minutes, 1880-1885, 1915, 1919, 1936-1956; lists of officers of Augusta National Bank since 1875; typescript history of Augusta National Bank; program, 38th annual meeting, Virginia Bankers Association, Ingleside, 1946; letter of Charles Catlett to Mrs. Witz, 1943; eulogy, T. Alex Grant, 1970; correspondence, 1964-1965; typescript regarding Staunton Banks; report to stockholders, Augusta National Bank, 1960; 8 inch x 10 inch photographs, bank officials, unidentified; First and Merchants Correspondence, 1964; blank debit slip, Augusta National Bank; handwritten notes, history of Augusta National Bank; clipping, J. Rodes Brown, Jr.; resolutions, Hugh White Sheffey, obituary; *Staunton Leader*, full page advertisement, 75th anniversary of Augusta National Bank, May 28, 1950; message to stockholders of Augusta National Bank, June 28, 1962 [merger with First and Merchants Bank of Richmond], 2 copies; obituary, R. Frank Boan; Terry Court branch opening, leaflet; *News Leader* clipping, May 28, 1972, new building opening, First and Merchants Bank [building subsequently became site of Nations Bank, Sovran Bank, Bank of America, First Bank of Strasburg, which took over the building when Bank of America closed its Staunton operation ca. 2015]; magazine, First and Merchants messenger, summer 1962]; Augusta Medical Center clippings; clipping, razing of King's Daughters' Hospital, Staunton; Augusta Health Corporation annual report, 1987-1988; Augusta Health Corporation correspondence; Augusta County Historical Society papers; *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, Vol. 26., No.1, Augusta Bar Profiles by Fitzhugh Elder; Augusta County Historical Society, Membership Directory, 1989; Elder correspondence; clippings, *News-Leader*, November 10, 1964--founding of Historical Society; Virginia Historical Society, 35 year plus

members; signatures of the Indian chiefs on the Treaty with the Six Nations, 1749; constitution of the Augusta County Historical Society, by laws; Augusta County Historical Society Charter membership; 1966; Augusta County Historical Society Board Meetings Minutes; Augusta County Historical Society correspondence; pamphlet, Clement H. Silvestro, organizing a local historical society (American Association for State and Local History; Joseph A. Waddell, photocopy from his book, *Home Scenes and Family Sketches*, Chapter 1; obituary resolutions: Edward F. Bonfoey; Alexander Erskine Sproul; George Moffett Cochran; Frank R. Pancake address; photocopy of letter of T. C. E., otherwise unidentified, 1900; J. H. May; T. S. Mandeville; Eugene T. Hays; W. C. Marsh; Charles E. Kelly; Kenneth H. Knorr; Dr. Randolph Tucker Shields; Dr. H. McKelden Smith; Frank Robbins Pancake; Floridus Scott Crosby; J. Waller Callison; Norris T. Warner; S. I. Davis; G. Dayton Hodges; Glenn E. Yount; Morris T. Warner; Alex T. A. Grant; Peyton Cochran; R. Frank Boan; A. W. Carpenter; J. H. May; Duncan Curry; Roy T. Frye; Newspapers: *Evening Leader*, 1940, Augusta County Bicentennial Issue; *Staunton Leader*, October 28, 1960, Eisenhower Visit to Staunton

2017.0017 William B. Obaugh Dunsmore Business College Diploma, 1912 diploma from Dunsmore Business College, for William B. Obaugh, signed by J. G. Dunsmore with certificate of standing, Business Department, Dunsmore Business College, 1912; letter of reference, signed by J. G. Dunsmore, 1919

2017.0018 The Silverman Collection A collection of 22 folders in one standard Hollinger box 10 inches x 15 ½ inches x 5 inches also containing 2 wooden cigar boxes for Havana Ribbon Cigars and El Producto cigars. The folders include undated envelopes, an issue of the *Staunton Vindicator* from May 28, 1868, an issue of the *Alexandria Gazette* of January 8, 1794, 2 Virginia Almanacs published by Robert Andrews of Richmond in 1794 and 1795, and correspondence, mostly from Alexander Kinney to his brother William Kinney, clerk of the Augusta County Courts. Alexander Kinney lived in Clinton, Mississippi. There are also a few letters on legal business from Waynesboro, Va., and Lockport, N.Y. The letters span from 1831 to 1853. There is also a merchant's license from Staunton, Va., 1879.

2017.0019 Mary Baldwin University Sesquicentennial Book 1 folder; booklet published by Mary Baldwin University in 2017 to commemorate 175th Anniversary of Mary Baldwin; contains photographs, biographical sketches, list of faculty and administrators

2017.0020 Hoge Family Scrapbook 1 folder, Hoge Family Scrapbook donated by Robert Rowe, Carlisle, Pa.. Contains photographs and clippings, a family genealogy of the Hoge family, and information about Staunton.

2017.0021 Early Virginia Newspapers Microfilm Collection two reels of microfilm with the following newspapers: Staunton: *Staunton Spy*, 1793-1795; *Staunton Political Mirror*, 1800-1802; *Staunton Political Censor*, 1808-1809; *Staunton Spirit of the Press*, 1811; *Staunton Observer*, 1814; Norfolk: *Norfolk and Portsmouth Gazette*, 1789; *Commercial Register*, 1802-1803; Fincastle: *Fincastle Herald of Virginia*, 1800; *Fincastle Weekly Advertiser*, 1801; *Fincastle Herald of the Valley*, 1820-1823; Petersburg: *Petersburg Daily Courier*, 1814-1815; *Petersburg American Star*, 1817-1818

2017.0022 Museum Studies Book Collection a collection of 33 books on museum studies topics added to the library section of the collections

2017.0023 Stuarts Draft Book Collection A collection of 131 books on Augusta County, Virginia, and regional history; subjects include the American Revolution,

Civil War, African-Americans, biographies, general Virginia, flora and fauna, geology, environmental problems, the Foxfire books, folk life and folklore, West Virginia, neighboring counties, Augusta County, Staunton, and novels by Ellen Glasgow, Mary Johnston, Earl Hamner, Jr., and William Alexander Caruthers.

2017.0024 Helmick Collection A collection of miscellaneous items found in a shed at the Inn in Old Virginia, Staunton; including: 2 ink sketches—Pimlico Race Track—100th Running of the Preakness Race; pyrography drawing on wood of revolver marked with initials “B. H.” and note saying from Jeb Erickson to Uncle Bob; pencil sketch with vignettes of Churchill Downs and the Kentucky Derby; oval portrait of infant; verse on says “Pettus Shelton Hope son of Mrs. P. W. Hope; oldest son died when a baby”; unidentified oval portrait of young man; book; A Second Reader—The Howe Readers (Will D. Howe, Myron T. Prichard, Elisabeth V. Brown—1909 Charles Scribner’s Sons); book, Alexander Fletcher, *A Guide to Family Devotion* containing hymns, a portion of Scripture with reflections, and a prayer for the morning and evening of every day of the year by the Rev. Alexander Fletcher of Finsbury Chapel, London (New York, R. Martin Co., 1841). With 13 engravings of biblical subjects and an index of miscellaneous prayers; inscribed “for Henry Howell Lewis, Jr. 7 years old in 1888”; a collection of negatives taken by postcard photographer Bob Glander; subjects include Monticello, Michie Tavern, Meadow Run Grist Mill, Ingleside, Staunton Country Club, various tourist attractions; bundles of postcards taken by Bob Glander showing Sperryville Country Store, mountain crafts store, a Blue Ridge mountain troll, Applesseed restaurants and motel in New Market, an old log cabin

2017.0025 Art in the Park Poster. 2017 a poster for “A Celebratory Exhibition of Art in the Park,” 16 Best in Show Winners; April 7-May 13, 2017; reception in Smith Center

2017.0026 Drumheller Map Collection map, J. R. Hildebrand, An Historical Map of Augusta County 1732-1872, 3 feet x 2 feet,[a rolled up map in telescopic Hollinger box]; map, David A. Hubbard, Jr., Selected Karst Features of Northern Valley and Ridge Province; Virginia Department of Conservation and Economic Resources, Division of Mineral Resources, 1983; plastic contour map, Charlottesville Quadrant, N.J. 17-6, Army Map Service, Corps of Engineers; 13 maps of Augusta County Virginia showing primary and secondary highways, 08-42, Virginia Department of Highways, 1942, in cooperation with the Federal Works Agency

2017.0027 Janet Downs Augusta Mills Collection One Hollinger box, 10 inches x 15 ½ inches x 5 inches with 9 folders of clippings, some photocopied, postcards, snapshots 3 inches x 5 inches, correspondence, and brochures. Some of these materials were used in the preparation of the book *The Mills of Augusta County* by Janet Baugher Downs and Earl Downs. A number of the illustrations were from the *Staunton News Leader* series Focus on History by Joe Nutt, published ca. 1993. Some of the clippings pertain to adjacent counties such as Albemarle, Rockingham, Nelson, and Rockbridge. A section from an insert in the *News Leader* of April 25, 1995, on the Communities of Augusta County is also included. Most of the clippings are from the *News Leader*, but there are others from the *News Record* and the *News Gazette*. Folder 7 contains some Statler Brothers materials. Folder 9 contains a copy of the article by Richard Hamrick, “Mills and Milling in Augusta County,” Fall 1982, *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, Vol. 18, No. 2, C. E. May’s description of the mills of the North River, Middle River, and Naked Creek in Augusta

County, and a list of the mills of Augusta County. There are also several copies of a CD of Christmas music "Home for the Holidays" in the collection. Also included: Focus on History by Joe Nutt, Hanger Mill, Mt. Solon Mill, Willow Spout, Stribling Springs, Vesuvius Iron Works, Bickle grocery delivery truck, cannery and cider mill, Jordan's Grist and Cider Mill, the Spring Hill Community, Palmer's Mill, Greenville Roller Mill, village of Greenville, Osceola Mill; correspondence from Joe Nutt, 2002; Bowman's Mill, Weyers Cave Milling Company, old Crozet school house, old house at Simmons Gap, Southern Railway Steam Engine No. 2839, Miller's Mill, William J. Carter farm on the Blue Ridge Parkway; Hanger Mill, Garber Mill/Sites Mill, tilt hammer mills, Wallace-Daniel Mill, Jordan's Marl Bed Mill, Churchville Mill, Gardner Mill, Augusta Roller Mills, Hanger-Shutterlee-Franks Mill, Crickenberger Mill, Ast Mill, Stover Mill, Fort Defiance Mills, Jordan's Mill, Greenville Mill, Swoope Milling, Palmer's Mill, Knightly Mill, Quick's Mill; some photos from *News Leader* series "Old Augusta Mills" from the Hamrick Collection, Palmer's Mill, Mossy Creek Old Mill, Knightly Old Mill, Bear Planeing Mill, Churchville, Bear Funeral Home and Mill; McCormick Mill; Steele's Tavern; correspondence with Joe Nutt, 2003; 4 ½ inches x 3 ½ inches snapshots of mills (unidentified, but some of McCormick Mill and Walnut Grove; postcards of Walnut Grove and the McCormick Mill; Michie Tavern new Grist Mill from Meadow Run at Laurel Hill in Augusta County; photo of Hanger's Mill, Mapleton Roller Mill bag; clippings from the *Lexington News Gazette*, 1996, on the restoration of McCormick's Mill; clippings from the *News Record*, 2002, concerning Cyrus McCormick Virginia Legends Walk at Virginia Beach; Skyline; extra McCormick Mill, 2001; clipping, *News Leader*, McCormick farm Field Day 1997, 2000. brochure/flier from the P. Buckley Moss Museum with paintings of the McCormick Mill by P. Buckley Moss. Also *News Leader* article from 1996 on the repair of the McCormick Mill; Fall 1998 clipping, Old Mills showing a new water wheel for the McCormick Mill; brochure, McCormick Mill; Higgs and Young ad; photograph of Furr's Mill and Furr's Mill Bags; memo on Wallace Mill, 2002; clipping, Cosby's Mill from the *News Record*; article about Grottoes, 1976 from the *News Leader*; Cosby Mill, Grottoes, Elkton Mill; photograph of Cosby Mill flour bag; Chester Farms Woolen Mill, Churchville, 2004, with Francis Chester; photo of Coiner's Mill; Burkettown Mill; obituaries for D. I. Suter and Mary Shank, 1930; Skyline Extra, 2002, Belle Boyd; Weyers Cave; Staunton-Augusta County Fair at Gypsy Hill Park (calendar page 2002); Valley Mills house, *News Record*, 1998; Sugar Loaf Farm, Arbor Hill, *News Leader*, 1992; Thelma Newman column, Mt. Zion Baptist Church, historical sketch of African-American church in Staunton, *News Leader*, 2003; notes on millstones; Garden Week Supplement, 2003, with notes on houses; *News Leader* article, January 28, 1997, Lady Rebecca Gooch; History of Staunton by Fred Pfisterer [City Editor of *News Leader*], January 4, 1997; notes on Beverley's Mill Place; Weyer's Cave Clipping, undated, *News Leader*; Waynesboro column by Garvey Winegar on trout fishing; clipping of William F. Landes Dodge and DeSoto Cars, Waynesboro, undated; clippings on Virginia fishing; clipping, "Industry Brings Change to Verona"; undated, Middle River Bridge at Verona; clipping, Moses Alexander furniture factory, West Main Street, Waynesboro; clipping, Grandma Moses; undated *News Leader* clipping, Stuarts Draft; Joe Nutt Pen and Ink Drawings of Edinburg Mill, Burwell-Morgan Mill at Millwood, Va.; Osceola Mill, Steele's Tavern, Va.; Wade's Mill, Brownsburg and note card for Wade's Mill;

Willow Grove Mill at Luray, Zirkle's Mill at Forestville, Va.; clipping, Staunton history by Fred Pfisterer, *News Leader*, 1995; clipping with miscellaneous stories concerning Staunton; undated and unidentified publication, "Staunton--County Seat of Augusta County; clipping, Blue Ridge Antiques Guide, 2002; clipping, Re-Enactment Keeps County's 5th Infantry Alive" (ca. 1990?); clipping, *News Leader*, Battle of Piedmont; undated clipping about Mt. Sidney, possibly from the *News Leader*; undated clipping, Sherando; clipping, Lyndhurst Post Office; clipping, *News Leader*, Shendun--Hotchkiss's Valley City That Never Was, 1997; clipping, Grottoes, *News Leader* 1995; clipping, *Daily News Record*, Cave Station, 1992; clipping, *News Leader* 1940, Greenville--Historic Town of Augusta; undated, clipping, John Brake's history of Greenville; clipping, *News Leader*, Tinkling Spring Presbyterian Church; clipping, *News Leader*, undated, County Library Had Its Start at Beverley Manor School; undated clipping, *News Leader*, Fishersville settled in early 1700s; clipping, Staunton; clipping, *News Leader*, 1995, Dooms; clipping, *News Leader*, 1995, Harriston, Grottoes, Crimora, reverse side, New Hope; clipping, *News Leader*, 1995, Deerfield; clipping, advertisement for the Buckhorn Inn; clipping, *News Leader*, undated, Craigsville; clipping, *News Leader*, Churchville, 1995; clipping, Augusta Springs, undated and unidentified; clipping, Centerville, unidentified and undated; clipping, photograph of old Hamrick Funeral Home; Statler Brothers materials: *News Leader*, November 2, 2016, "See Y'all on the 4th!"; Page *News Courier*, March 9, 2017, Local Life--"Standing Rock Protester" [Native American protest against pipeline being built through tribal lands in the Dakotas]; program, The Statler Brothers Happy Birthday USA July 4-5, 1982; program, 9th Annual Happy Birthday USA July 3-4, 1978; 5 postcards of the Woodrow Wilson Rehabilitation Center, Fishersville, ca. 1975 [Janet Downs was a nurse at WWRC]; photocopies of business correspondence and stationery of mills and business associated with milling from Augusta County: Andrew Bowling, Augusta Mills, 1898-1904; C. H. Cohron & Son, Hay Grain, Flour, Feed, 1913; Stuarts Draft Mills, Ground Wheat, Barley, and Corn; T. P. Byers Implement Co., Staunton, 1926; C. and J. M. Kline and Co., and Wampler, 1871; J.N. Coiner Merchant Miller, 1921; George S. E. Craun, Flour Barrels, Headings and Lumber, 1900, Burketown, Va.; Crimora Supply Co., Hay, Straw, Corn and Wheat, 1924; B. W. Crum & Bro., dealers in buggies, surries, runabouts, the Fish Wagon, Cultivators, Plane, Disc Harrows, 1911, Staunton, Va.; The Fitzwater Wheel Compass, Hanover, PA, 1912; Ft. Defiance Mills; Higgs and Young, Flour, Apple, and Lime Barrels, 1912; Hoy Brothers--Staunton Feed Mills, 1898; Houchens Family, photocopy of photograph; G. R. Jordan, high grade roller flour, feed, etc., 1907; W. M. Kerr, full roller process flour, 1904; the Wolf Co., Chambersburg, Pa.; Laurel Hill Milling Co.; More Milling correspondence and stationery: Witz and Holt, patent process and other high grades of flour, 1891 (Staunton Roller Mills); Carlyle K. Nicholas obituary, undated; White Star Mills, J. Harold Kivlighan and Catherine H. Lahens; J. H. Wade White Lily Best Patent Flour, Greenville, Va.; Valley Milling Co., Swoope, Va., 191_; W. J. Elliott Roller Process Flour, Meal, etc., 1895; Rockland Milling Co., 1898, Weyers Cave, Va.; Red Mills, Crimora, Va., 1945; H. L. Powell, Barrels and Lumber; Crimora Supply Co., 1945; Plaine and Koiner, hay, straw, machinery, feed, and fertilizer, 1905; Nicholas Milling, Co., Harriston, Va., 1919; D. Myers, General Merchandise, Churchville, Va.; Moffetts Creek Roller Mills, E. B. Lucas; Mossy Creek Roller Mills, J. T. A. Cupp, 19__; Augusta Milling and Mercantile, 1904; copy

of Hamrick Article, the Mills of Augusta County, Fall 1982, *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, Vol. 18, No. 2. There is also a photocopied excerpt from C.E. May, *My Augusta--A Spot of Earth--Not a Woman*, which contains a description of mills on the Middle and North Rivers and Naked Creek. There is also a photocopied list of the mills of Augusta County. Also a clipping, founding of King's Daughters' Hospital in 1890; founding of White Star Mills; typescript on the Wallace Mill; copy of photograph J. P. Ast Hardware; home, Aspen Hill; Trimble Mill; reproduction of bag of Swoope Mills Laying Mash; obituary, Charles A. Rimel; Sugar Loaf Farm; correspondence, Virginia Public Service Co., Weyers Cave, Va., 1934; Rockland Mills; Luther E. Long obituary; reproduction of flour bag, Weyers Cave Milling Co.; photocopy of invoice, Weyers Cave Milling Co.; obituary, Jackson E. Quick; obituary, Glendon L. Blosser; clipping, W. N. Evans finds ancient grist mill near Weyers Cave, Va.; Mount Sidney United Methodist Church; African-American Methodist Church in Mount Sidney; Salem Lutheran Church, Mt. Sidney; Willow Spring feature in Real Estate Showcase, *Daily News Record*, 2004; Mt. Solon Mill; Mossy Creek Mill; Augusta Milling and Merchantile Co. Mill; C. K. Morrison Building, corner of Church and Beverley Streets, Staunton; C. K. Morrison; Arcadia Hotel; Henry Clay visit to Staunton, August 1839; Landram Brothers, Quality Cleaners; C. W. Lamber building contractors

2017.0028 Francisco Evening Leader Bicentennial Edition, 1940 The 1940 Augusta County Bicentennial issue of the Staunton Evening Leader

2017.0029 Brush Carte de Visite Huffman photograph Carte de visite photograph of little boy ca.1860s.; verso says "Mike?"; studio: Morrison artist and photographer, Harrisonburg, Va.; note from donor identifies subject as Michael Huffman born in the 1880s in Augusta County, son of James and Mary Elizabeth Henton Huffman, buried in Thornrose Cemetery; veteran of the 10th Virginia; signed up August 1861 when he turned 21 and lived through the war; taken prisoner at Spotsylvania Courthouse, May 12, 1864; he survived Elmira, NY, prison camp, took the oath of allegiance, and returned to a "ruined" Valley and married. Died in Washington, D. C., in 1921. Donor's husband and grandson are named in his honor. They lived at 211 S. Jefferson Ave., Staunton. Mary Elizabeth Henton was born in Harrisonville and died in Staunton in 1903. The Huffman family are descendants of the Germanna Colony who crossed the mountains from Culpeper to Page County. The family was originally from Nassau Siegen, Germany, and were invited by Gov. Spotswood to be indentured to him to work in his iron works and to be a buffer between the English and the Indians.

2017.0030 Lynd-Oak Extension Club and Other Papers A collection of several bulletins relating to the geological, social, and economic aspects of Augusta County and surrounding areas. Also included is a collection of newspaper clippings and materials related to the Oak-Lynd Home Demonstration Club as well as a collection of bulletins from the Churchville Charge of the Methodist Church. The collection was donated by the Augusta County Library. Collection includes: *Soil Survey of Augusta County, Virginia*, by R. C. Jumey, R. E. Devereux, G. W. Patteson, Edward Shulkcum, Bureau of Chemistry and Soils(1937); University of Virginia Record Extension Series--*An Economic and Social Survey of Augusta County* (January 1928) by Clay Catlett and Elliott G. Fishburne (2 copies, one in poor condition); Bulletin of the State Library, Virginia Counties--Those Resulting from Virginia Legislation, by Morgan Poitiaux Robinson, Volume 9, Nos. 1, 2,

and 3 (January, April, July 1916); *Soil Survey of Augusta County, Virginia*, by R. C. Jumey, R. E. Devereux, G. W. Patteson, Edward Shulkcum, Bureau of Chemistry and Soils (1937); *Geology of Staunton, Churchville, Greenville, and Stuarts Draft Quadrangles* by Eugene Rader, Report of Investigations 12, Virginia Department of Mineral Resources (1967); Churchville [Methodist] Charge folders, 1931-1941, which include St. James Methodist Church, South, Churchville, Va; The Jennings Gap Church, The Churchville Charge; Scrapbook with clippings for the Oak-Lynd Home Demonstration Club, 1954-1967; typescript history of the club, 1949-1967 [originals]; Diaries, 1884-1895; diaries, 1896-1904 with torn card from Rumford Chemical Works

2017.0031 Staunton Manufacturing Company Photograph panoramic photograph 24 inches x 8 ½ inches of the employees of Staunton Manufacturing Company (The Coat Factory) at 504 North Augusta Street, January 1959. Plant No. 2 at 504 North Augusta. Plant No. 2 at 202 N. Augusta.

2017.0032 J.B. Yount III Papers and Books Yearbook, New Hope High School, 1924-1925; with advertisements and photographs; Special Souvenir Program, Seventh Annual Convention, American Legion, Department of Virginia, Staunton, Virginia, August 10-12, 1925. With photographs of Staunton scenes Yearbook, New Hope High School, Volume 2, 1942. with photographs and advertisements; book, J. Pritts, *The Farmer's Book and Family Instructor Embracing the Most Important of the Recent Scientific Discoveries Connected with Practical Agriculture...* Especially for the farmer and domestic family circle. Carefully compiled from the best sources, J. Pritts, Chambersburg, Pa., 1845; book, William Alphonso Murrill, *The Natural History of Staunton, Virginia*. Illustrated with three colored plates and one halftone. Published by W. A. Murrill, Bronxwood Park, New York City, 1919; book, Porte Crayon [David H. Strother], *Virginia Illustrated Containing A Visit to the Virginian Canaan and the Adventures of Porte Crayon and His Cousins*. New York; Harper & Brothers, 1871. [David H. Strother, alias Porte Crayon, was born in Martinsburg, W. Va., September 26 1846. He served in the Union Army with the rank of General. Died in Jefferson County, Wva, 1888.]; pamphlet, Armistead Gordon, *The Valley Ulsterman—A Chapter in Virginia History*; An Address delivered before the Phi Beta Kappa Society of the College of William and Mary, Williamsburg, Va., February 18, 1896; Recipe book, Mrs. A. M. Fauntleroy, *Tried Receipts of Staunton's Housekeepers*, Staunton, Va., December 2, 1891, with advertisements; Forty-First Annual Catalogue, The Dunsmore Business College, Staunton, Va., 1912-1913. Roster of Students included.; Ledger book of Joseph Byron Yount III, 917 East Main Street, Waynesboro, Va., 231 pages, holograph, personal journal from June 7, 1963 to November 9, 1963; record book used as a scrapbook of recipes. Includes "Emily Dickinson—Profile of the Poet as Cook with Selected Recipes. Amherst, Massachusetts, 1976; clippings from *Southern Living*, *Time*, *Family Weekly*, *Parade Magazine*. *The New York Times*, *Pageant* magazine photocopy, Thank you card from cousins Larry and June. Clippings of loose recipes; advertising for Formica, Armstrong Ceilings, Andersen Windowwalls and Masonite paneling; Washington Post food page, November 14, 1982; handwritten copy of bill from Fishburne's Drug Store, 1883-1884; list of sandwiches and drinks from "Summer of '42" menu; Scrapbook, 13 inch x 12 inch x 2 inch, University of Virginia theatrical performances, Punch and Julep, "Loving Abroad," 1959, includes glossy ; photographs, 1 polaroid, 8 ½ inch x 10 inch glossies. Typescripts of script. Hollins cast; Scrapbook, 14½ inch

x 12 inch x 2 inch. Both sides of cover have come off. Many clippings have come loose; Clippings pasted inside include stories about Yount's activities at U.Va., ca. 1962-3; reviews from the *Cavalier Daily*; Fishburne alumni activities; clippings concerning Vietnam; *New Yorker* cartoons; article about Yount's writing musical comedy lyrics; program for Oklahoma!; Kiss Me Kate; Program, University of Virginia R.O.T.C. commissioning exercises, 1960 [Yount commissioned 2nd Lieutenant and will serve in military intelligence; graduation program, U.Va., 1960, 1963 [J.B. Yount received A.B. at U.Va., 1960; clipping 1963 describes education of J. B. Yount III, which includes graduation from Bethany Lutheran School, Fishburne Military School, U.Va., and U.Va. Law School; also authorized to practice before the Virginia Supreme Court, 1963]; Baccalaureate Service; greeting cards, congratulations; note indicating Yount passed the bar exam, 1963]; Farmington Country Club invitations; schedule for trip to the U.N., 1958: Loose clippings from this scrapbook include letter from Waynesboro Jaycees, memo on speeding conviction from Richard A. Davis, Personnel Manager, *Waynesboro News Virginian*; Crompton Shenandoah Co. personnel matters; pages from programs concerning Kiwanis minstrel show; Fishburne Military Academy Commencement speech story; Yount letter for Waynesboro City Council and the State Water Control Board rigid standards for South River; Toastmaster speakers clipping; clipping concerning the Spinsters Club Ball at the Ingleside; clipping, Waynesboro purchase of Fishburne military school, 1950; announcement of appointment of Col. Robert Carroll Miller as 6th superintendent of Fishburne; J. B. Yount is president of the Board of Trustees] *News Virginian* story about petition for redistricting now circulating in county, 1967; program, Annual Dinner, Virginia Manufacturers Association, 1966; invitation to annual Woodrow Wilson Birthplace Luncheon, at the Ingleside, 1966; clipping about honors for Waynesboro High School Key Club

2017.0033 Richie Collection journals, ledgers, books from a general store in Lofton, Va., 1920s-1930s

2017.0034 James Conway Book book, James Conway, America's Library—*The Story of the Library of Congress, 1800-2000* (2000); donation by Robert Newlen of the Library of Congress. Newlen was the speaker at the ACHS 2017 Annual Banquet.

2017.0035 Sherwood Collection photographic card, Staunton Train Stairs by Michael Reisenberg; photographic card, West Beverley St. -1907; entitled "Main Street, Staunton, Va."

2017.0036 Rockbridge County Historical Society Proceedings journal, Rockbridge Historical Society *Proceedings*, Vol 14, 2006-2010, in one volume;

2017.0037 Albemarle Charlottesville Historical Society Magazine journal, Vol. 70, 2012; Vol. 71, 2013

2017.0038 Splaun Collection of Smith's Transfer Memorabilia advertising memorabilia from Smith's Transfer; includes some Mack Truck memorabilia; collection contains mug, pen and pencil set, books of matches, belt buckle for Smith's and Mack Trucks; a shot glass, pocket knife in shape of truck, pin, tie tack, clipping in plastic case with picture of Roy R. Smith "Died AMC 9 P.M.--4-16-14-11-2002", pencils. button "I'm an Owner"; plastic bottle cap, cloth patch "ARA Services--Smith's Transfer", a plastic wheel for a model truck, plastic covered memo book with comb and pen, metal bull dog symbol of Mack trucks, metal money clip marked "Smith's Transfer Corp. Refrigerated Division. Staunton, Virginia", plastic decal sticker "ST Haul Mark of Service"; butane lighter in collection discarded by Archives

2017.0039 Dr. Samuel Brown Morrison Obituary photocopy of a clipping of obituary of Dr. Samuel Brown Morrison (1828-1901), proprietor of a sanitarium (sic) at Rockbridge Baths, Confederate Army Surgeon; photocopy of a sketch of his military career from the Virginia Regimental History Series [His medical ledger from 1861 is in collection # 799.]

2017.0040 Hispanic Language Newspaper Collection 3 Spanish language newspapers from 2016-2017 distributed in Staunton, Waynesboro, and other Virginia communities: 2 issues from *Nuevas Raices* [New Roots], 2017, published in Harrisonburg; 1 issue of *Horizontes*, 2016

2017.0041 Fairview Cemetery Collection a computerized inventory of interments in Fairview Cemetery, an African-American cemetery in Staunton; listed in alphabetical order by family name; also a brochure from the Friends of Fairview

2017.0042 Blue Ridge Community College Catalog booklet, Blue Ridge Community College catalog, 2016-2017; leaflet, student activities at Blue Ridge

2017.0043 Bell Family Letter letter with envelope from Fort Thomas, Ky., 1933 from "Damma" to Bell family members in Columbus, Ohio; stamp on envelope is from New Deal era promoting the National Recovery Act of 1933

2017.0044 Enlightened Princesses Article magazine, *Yale Alumni Magazine*, 2017, article by Joanna Marschner about exhibit at Kensington Palace and the Yale Center for British Art concerning the "Enlightened Princesses" which reviewed the charitable and philanthropic activities of Princesses Caroline, Charlotte, and Augusta of the eighteenth century. Princess Augusta was the mother of George III and person after whom Augusta County is named

2017.0045 Threads of History Video compact disc, *Threads of History: Conversations with a Community*; interviews with a group of graduates and teachers of Staunton's Booker T. Washington High School, ca. 2015-2016; recounts African-Americans' experiences during the era of segregation

2017.0046 First Presbyterian Church Directory, 2002 booklet, pictorial church directory for First Presbyterian Church, 2002 [published by Olan Mills Studio]

2017.0047 Valley and Staunton Architecture Special Supplement, 2017 special supplement to the *Daily News Leader*, on Valley and Staunton architecture, May 17, 2017

2017.0048 Staunton Heritage Rifle Advertisement flier from *Daily News Leader* advertising the Staunton Heritage Rifle from Fort Collins, Colorado; offer 10 memberships in the National Rifle Association to purchasers

2017.0049 Staunton Music Festival Programs, 2015 Programs and tickets from the Staunton Music Festival, August 2015, 2017; booklet, Jason Stell, Sights and Sounds—The Staunton Music Festival, 1997-2017 [has interior views of Trinity Episcopal Church, First Presbyterian Church, Central Methodist Church, Christ Lutheran Church [Taylor and Boody Organ]

2017.0050 Dr. Francis T. Stribling Research Notes Photocopy of documents from Western State Hospital Archives; statistical tables of patients, photocopied letter, forms, glossary of medical terms, copy of photographs of founders of the Association of Medical Superintendents of American Institutions for the Insane and the American Medico-Psychological Association

2017.0051 Augusta County Virginia Area Map 1 folder, Augusta County, Virginia, area map in color with advertisements, ca. 2016

2017.0052 Augusta County Courthouse Controversy Clippings from the Staunton *Daily News Leader* concerning the proposed move of the Augusta County Courthouse from Staunton to Verona, 2016-2017

2017.0053 *The Progressive Farmer* Issue of *The Progressive Farmer*, November 15-30, 1931, Carolinas-Virginia edition; subscriber was C. L. Hedrick, Rte. 4, Elkton, Va.

2017.0054 *The Advocate*, 1878 Issue of *The Advocate*, October 2, 1878 [Greenbacker newspaper]; stored in drawer 9 of map cabinet

2017.0055 *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography* Collection Hard-bound issues of the *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, complete 1894-1948, Vols. 1-56; Unbound issues of the *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, published by the Virginia Historical Society (issues with articles pertaining to the Valley are noted): 1998, vol. 104, No. 3; 2000, vol. 108, No. 3; 2001, vol. 109, Nos. 1-3: No. 1 contains article "Pennsylvania and Virginia Germans during the Civil War: A Brief History and Comparative Analysis"; 202, vol. 110, Nos. 1-4; 2003 vol. 111, Nos. 1-4; 2004, vol. 112, Nos. 1-3; 2005, vol. 113, Nos. 1-3; 2006, vol. 114, Nos. 3-4; 2007, vol. 115, Nos. 1-4; 2008, vol. 116, Nos. 1-4: No. 4 contains article, "Virginia Dissenters' Struggle for Religious Liberty during the American Revolution"; 2009, vol. 117, Nos. 1-4: No. 2 contains article "Fighting Over Fencing: Agricultural Reform"; 2010, vol. 118, Nos. 1-4: No. 2 contains article "Michael Cresap and the Promulgation of Settled Land Claiming in the Backcountry, 1765-1774"; also No. 4, "Shenandoah River Gundalow"; 2011, vol. 119, Nos. 1-4; 2012, vol. 120, Nos. 1-4; 2013, vol. 121, Nos. 1-4; 2014, vol. 122, Nos. 1-4; 2015, vol. 123, Nos. 1-4; 2016, vol. 124, Nos. 1-4; 2017, vol. 125, Nos. 1-2; No. 2 contains "History of Madness" [Western State Hospital]; Duplicate Copies include Vol. 118, Nos. 1-3; Vol. 116, No. 1; Vol. 115, Nos. 2-3.

2017.0057 John Hatch Stover Research Notes Photocopied research notes about John Hatch Stover, 52nd Va. Regiment; includes photocopy of a Stover from Valley of the Shadow Project

2017.0058 Civil War Era Newspaper Reissues *Frank Leslie's Illustrated Newspaper*—June 15, September 28, October 5, November 9, 1861; June 14, 1862; *Harper's Weekly*—*A Journal of Civilization*—June 3, September 2, September 9, September 16, September 30, November 18, 1865; May 26, 1866

2017.0059 Holliday's Shoe Store Advertisement McH. Holliday's Shoe Store color cardboard picture of little girl; ca. 1900

2017.0060 Charlottesville Protests Clippings, 2017 Clippings from the *Washington Post* and the Staunton *Daily News Leader* concerning the 2017 the White Supremacists rally and counter protests over the removal of Confederate statues in a public park

2017.0061 Keller Book Collection book, Karen J. Hall and Friends of the Blue Ridge Parkway, Inc. *Building the Blue Ridge Parkway—Images of America*, 2007. Arcadia Press book, George Tucker, *The Valley of the Shenandoah or Memoirs of the Graysons* [novel]. Southern Literary Classics Series, 1970. University of North Carolina Press.

2017.0062 Ann McCleary Photographs of Mt. Sidney Back Up Disk 1 folder: a compact disk of Ann McCleary's photographs of Mt. Sidney

2017.0063 John Kirby Photograph 1 folder: photograph of Judge John Kirby with description of relationships to Gibbs and Kirby families on verso

2017.0064 Woodrow Wilson General Hospital Photocopies 1 folder of 4 photocopied photographs of the Woodrow Wilson General Hospital, ca. 2017, with text of speech given at dedication of memorial monument May 30, 2017; includes photocopy of text of historical marker dedicated on the site

2017.0065 Berenson Mt. Pleasant Collection a collection of 5 folders of photocopies, typescripts, compact disks, 3 booklets, a print of Mt. Pleasant House by P. Buckley Moss, and a National Register Nomination file for Mt. Pleasant

2017.0066 Glen Sutton Mt. Sidney High School Alumni Association Collection A collection of materials including a Holy Bible and items concerning the Mt. Sidney High School Alumni Association with banquet tickets, speaker's notes [jokes], lists of addresses, obituaries, student photographs 1937-1947 [some identified on verso]. blank checks, deposit slips from Planters, Stellar One, and Union Banks, check register 1996-2010, school papers, funeral cards, correspondence, spreadsheet copy with list of Mt. Sidney High School Students, 1934-1953, Ingleside banquet arrangement items, invoices and bills of sale, memos concerning Mrs. Rowe's banquet facilities and clippings. Roster of persons attending the Mt. Sidney High School Alumni gatherings, 1972-2006, Glen [one n] Sutton was the organizer of the annual banquets. Collection contains the Authorized Version of the Holy Bible [with apocrypha], 1881; with folder of loose papers found inside the Bible and a family tree table with members of the Smith and Thomas families listed; Methodist Sunday School leaflet; also papers of the Mt. Sidney High School Alumni Association, photographs of individual members, Planters Bank blank checks and check book, a roster of members, tickets for 2010 reunion, and correspondence

2017.0067 Old Dominion Map Company Map of Tracts of Land Occupied by First Settlers of Augusta County 1 rolled map, Early Settlers of Augusta County, by Old Dominion Map Company (John Hale), undated; 24 inches x 42 inches

2017.0068 J. B. Yount Garment Collection A collection with miscellaneous textile items, mostly articles of women's clothing. Collection includes 3 lace items with necklace and bonnet; 2 long gloves with buttons; 1 pink and blue apron; 1 white long sleeved blouse, cotton; 1 child's suit with embroidery on a blue background; 1 crocheted table runner; 2 white blouses; 1 white blouse with lace collar; 6 red woven napkins; 1 pair of black shoes; 2 combs; card for Roselee Ladies Garters; black shawl with label Emile Pascal--Paris; white chenille bedspread, torn; certificate card, New Hope Methodist Church Vacation Church School, for Mrs. J. B. Yount, June 17-June 22, 1946; 6 postcard photographs ca. 1909 from collection of Stephens Russell Yount (1892-1959); picture of J. Dunsmore, proprietor of Dunsmore Business College: Dunsmore standing in front of a restaurant, location unknown; Dunsmore camping at Lake Washington [near Seattle], with old student and wife, 1909; Dunsmore at Lake Washington with Mrs. Williams in canoe, 1909; Dunsmore standing with a sea bass on Santa Catalina Island, 1909; Dunsmore riding an ostrich at Pasadena, California, 1909; Dunsmore at the tower of Pike's Peak, August 1909; Dunsmore in cowboy suit, undated; 1 compact disc with copies of photos of Prof. Dunsmore

2017.0069 World War II Memorabilia window poster "Buy Defense Savings Stamps Here" with Minuteman statue, red and blue window banner, "Serving Our Country" with 3 blue stars (indicates 3 persons in the service); card listing members of N.C.O. Club [verso advertisement for McClure Printing]

2017.0070 Jackson County Historical Society Postcard Collection 3 Bear Company postcards: dress parade, Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Va.; dress parade, Staunton Military Academy, Staunton, Va; The Woodrow Wilson Birthplace, Staunton, Virginia

2017.0071 Augusta County Argus Newspaper, 1898 issue of the *Augusta County Argus*, March 22, 1898 [issue pertains to beginning to the Spanish-American War]

2017.0072 Perspective Map of the City of Waynesboro (1891) map, recent reproduction, Perspective Map of the City of Waynesboro (1891), 18 inches x 24 inches; identifies railroads, manufacturers, hotels, churches, Fishburne, Brunswick Hotel, and Valley Seminary (female)

2017.0073 G. W. Huffman Papers tax receipt, Rockbridge County, 1917. George W. Huffman; bill of sale, McCormick and Son, Agricultural Implements, Raphine, Va., November 1, 1919

2017.0074 Henry Mercer's Moravian Tiles Collection a collection of 6 Moravian Tiles from the Henry Mercer Tile Works of Doylestown, Pa.; for their significance for Staunton and Waynesboro, see *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, Kenneth W. Keller, "Treasures Under Foot: Henry C. Mercer's Moravian Tiles in Staunton, Waynesboro, and Augusta County, Vol. 43 (2007), pp. 1-15. 4 of the tiles are originals: "Mayflower"; "Santa Maria"; "Smoke"; "Frog in the Reeds"; 2 are reproduction Mercer tiles, "Wife of Bath" and "Brown Fox". Tiles like these were used by Sam Collins in various homes, public buildings and houses of worship in Staunton and Waynesboro.

2017.0075 Tom Chaffin Book, *Tom Chaffin, Pathfinder—John Charles Fremont and the Course of American Empire* (2002)

2017.0076 Chaz Weaver Book, Chaz Weaver, *The Valley Baseball League—A History of Baseball in the Shenandoah Valley* (2014)

2017.0077 William Allan Book, William Allan, *History of the Campaign of Gen. T. J. (Stonewall) Jackson in the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia from November 4, 1861, to June 17, 1862*; with full maps of the region and of the battlefields by Jed. Hotchkiss (1880)

2017.0078 Beatty Diploma from Beverley Manor Academy framed diploma for La Verne Beatty from Beverley Manor Academy, 1914-1915 (1915); signed by Cora Hudson, Principal; Vernon Liclides, Teacher; R. G. Koiner, Clerk of School Board; F.M. Somerville, Chairman

2017.0079 Vild Collection 1 folder containing a bill of sale from the Greenville, Va., general merchandise store, from A.G. Duncan to Green B. Koogler, 1884; 1 notice from the U.S. Census Department, 1891, requesting that Mrs. George Koogler provide information about the mortgage on her house

2017.0080 John Batzel Biography of Thomas Lewis Spiral bound illustrated book by John Batzel, *The Life of Thomas Lewis -- Distinguished Surveyor, Patriot, and Valley Leader*, 2017

Index

A

Abney, W. A. 49
 Acquisitions of the Augusta County Historical Society 162
 Adams, John Quincy 55
 African Americans, Civil War 75-85; 1st Brigade Hinck's Colored Division 82; 5th United States Colored Infantry 78; 8th United States Colored Infantry 76; 9th United States Colored Heavy Artillery 79; 9th U. S. Colored Heavy Artillery 82; 27th U. S. Colored Infantry 79; 37th United States Colored Infantry 75, 82; 55th Massachusetts Infantry 75; Company A, 8th U. S. Colored Troops 79; U.S. Colored Infantry, Company K 82
 African-American community 100, 101, 106, 125, 144-146
 African Americans, military 21-40; 75-85
 African-American Heritage Festival 37
 African-American, recreation 100-102, 108-120, 125
 African-American, Scouting 115
 African-American life under segregation 144-146
A History of the Brethren in Virginia 68
 American Business Law Association 88
 American Jewish Relief Committee 93
 American Red Cross, 93
 American System 55
Annals of Augusta County 55
 Anti-German sentiment in World War I 91
 Appomattox Campaign 76
 Archives Committee of the Historical Society 162
 Army of the Potomac 79
 Ashby, James 82
 Asylum for Criminal Insane, Marion 19
Augusta County: Virginia's Western Frontier 149
 Augusta County, 44, 46, 57; Civil War 142; history of 149, 170, 173
 Augusta County Courthouse 166, 177
 Augusta County Home Guard 94
 Augusta County Training School 31
 Augusta Farm Cooperative, 148
 Augusta Military Academy 86-90, 92;

Third Tennessee Infantry (militia) 87; Museum 90

Augusta Savings Bank 42
 Ayers, Edward 56, 142, 148

B

Bagley, Ronald 118
 Baldwin family 41
 Baldwin, General 56; John 58, 61; John Brown 46
 Bank of the United States 55
 Baptist Bible School Union of Charlottesville 114
 Barlow, Gordon 149; Margie 149
 Barton, Clara 156
 Batzel, John 179
 Baxter (Judge) 66
 Bayshore Beach for African Americans. 101
 Beaty, Powhatan 78
 Beaver Creek Church 63
 Bechtel, Laten Erin 144
 Becks family 35
 Becks, Helen 101, 118, 119; James 29, 31, 36, 146
 Belgium Relief Commission 93
 Belgium, starvation in during World War I 93
 Benevolent Club 120
 Berry, Andrew 76
 Bethlehem Church at Tenth Legion 60
 Beverley Manor Academy 179
 Bickle, Robert G. 49
 Blackfriars Playhouse 148
 Blanton, Dennis 98, 135
 Blue Ridge Community College 176
 Blunt, Alice 82; Eva 82; Lucy 82; Maggie 82; Stephen 75, 82
 Booker T. Washington Alumni Committee 120
 Booker T. Washington High School 31, 100, 102, 111, 176
 Book Reviews 142-161
 Boot and Shoe Leather Manufacturing Company 43
 B&O Railroad 47
 Bosserman, Kenneth A. 121
 Boy Scouts 94
 Brethren During the Civil War 58
 Briggen Creek 76
 Bronson, James 78
 Brooke, W. Carroll 9

Brooks, Norma 118
 Brown-Bundy, Fontella 34
 Brown, Earl 118; Walter 147
 Brunk, Hugh 59
 Buckroe Beach 101
 Buffalo Soldiers 75
 Burns, William 76
 Butler, Benjamin 78
 Byerly, Benjamin 61

C

Caldwell, J. W. 18
 Calley, Eunice 7; Francis 5
 Camden Courthouse 78
 Camp Meigs 76
 Camp William Penn 76
Capital Dames: The Civil War and the Women of Washington 156
 Carter, Charles 33
 Casey family 35
 Casey, Herbert 28, 30, 36
 Catlett, Elizabeth 116
 Catlett family 125
 Central Augusta High School 31
 Chamberlain, Joshua 75
 Chambersburg, Pa. 143
 Chanute, Octave 154
 Cedar Creek, Battle of 150
 Chaffin's Farm, Battle of 76, 78
 Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad 48, 106
 Chidester, Davitt 108
 Chiles, John 115
 Christian, Martin 73
City of Sedition: The History of New York City During the Civil War 157
 City Point 78
 Civil War 58-85; 163
Civil War Magazine 150
 Clayborne, Howard 26, 27
 Clay, Henry 54, 55, 56, 100
 Cline, Fred 63; Frederick 58, 59, 69; Ida 58; J. M. 59; John A. 59, 62; Joseph M. 69, 70; M. 62; Martin 63; Samuel 58
 Clinton, Hillary 57
 Coates, Oliver 33
 Cochran family 56
 Collins, Sam 125; T. J. 98, 105, 107, 122, 124, 126
 Collins (T.J.) & Son 126
 Colonial Revival style 98, 125, 127, 129
 Commission of Outdoor Recreation 125
 Community Clubs 94

Confederate Congress 66
 Confederate Draft of 1862 58
 Confederate States of America 58
 Congenial Thirteen 120
 Conservative Party 50
 Conway, James 175
 Cook, Matilda 84
 Cooper, James 78
 Cox's Bridge, Battle of 75
 Cotopaxi Iron Company 50
 Cowen, Geoffrey 159
 Crabill, John 16; Nathan A. 15; Silas 16
 Crater, Battle of the 78
 Crawford, Melvin 33; Williner 119
 CSX Railroad 99
 Custer, George 150

D

Darbytown Road, Battle of 76
 Darcus, Frank 33; Linda Amarie Douglas 146
 Daughters of Ethiopia 120
 Davis, Jefferson 46, 156; Varina 156
Decision at Tom's Brook, 150
 Deep Bottom 78
 DeJarnette, Abijah 4; Anne 4; Cally 4; Chertsey Hopkins 5; Daniel 4; Elliotte 4; Elliott Hayes 1; Evelyn May Magruder 1; George 4; Henry 4; James 4; John 4; Joseph 1, 8, 12, 14, 16, 20; Mary 4; Mary Hampton 4; Samuel 4
 DeJarnette State Sanatorium in Staunton 1
 Democratic Party 54, 158
 Depression, the Great 155
 Dickerson, Sarah 84
 Dickinson, Anna 157
 Diehl, Earl, Sr. 58; Isaac Franklin 58; Wayne 58
 Dinwiddie, James 82; Nathan 82; Sally 82; Samuel 82
 Dix, Dorothea 156
 Donaghe, William W. 106
 Douglas, Frederick 75; Stephen A. 44
 Dunning, Charles 31, 32
 Dunsmore Business College 169, 174
 Dyer, Minerva 82

E

Early, Jubal 150
 Eastern Star 120
 East, John 88
 Ebenezer Church 114

Elder, Fitzhugh 168
 Election materials 164
 Election of 1828 55
 Election of 1832 54, 55
 Elks 120
 Erskine Company 151
 Evans, Dana Hand 148
 Executive Order 9981 30

F

Fair Oaks, Battle of 75, 76, 78
 Faulkner, James 56
 Fields, Cyrus Glenwood 22, 23, 29
 Fillmore, Millard 45
 First Baptist Church of Clifton Forge 114
 First Presbyterian Church 176
 Fishburne Military School 92
 Fisher, Suzanne 1
 Fitzgerald, Louise 36
 Forrest, Monroe 82
 Fort Defiance, Va. 86
 Fort Fisher, Battle of 75
 Fort Harrison, Battle of 75, 76
 Four Minute Men 94
Frank Leslie's Chimney Corner 50
 Franklin County, Pa. 142
 Frazier & Associates 98
 Frazier, William T. 98, 121
 Fredericksburg, Battle of 45
 Freedmen's Bureau 143
 Frontier Culture Museum, 148
 Funches, Henry 33

G

Garber, A. M. 43; Joel 59; Michael 42;
 Noah 59; Tom 47; William H. 42
 Garber family 41
 Garrett, John W. 48
 Garrison, William Lloyd 75
 Gettysburg, Battle of 142
 Givens, Irene 119, 122, 126
 Givens (Irene) Administration Building
 100, 122, 126, 127, 128, 130
 Glenmore Farm 151
Glenmore Hunt: The First Thirty Years 151
 Glenmore Hunt Club 151
 Goins, William 78
 Goodwin Lake 101
 Gothic Revival style 125
 Gray, Freddie 33
 Greeley, Horace 158

Green Pastures Recreation Area 101
 Grubert, William A. 110
 Guantanamo Bay 25
 Guinn, Samuel 79
 Gypsy Hill Park 109, 115, 118, 120, 122

H

Hamilton (Frank L.) Basketball Courts 132
 Hamrick Collection 165
 Happyland Lake 102
 Harlow (Harold V.) Softball Field 133
 Harman, Asher 41, 47, 48; Caroline Ste-
 phenson 43; Ellen 48; John 41, 45,
 47; Lewis 41, 47, 48; Michael
 Garber 41, 42, 45, 47, 48; Sarah
 Garber 41; Thomas 41, 47; William
 41, 44, 46
 Harman family 41
 Harpers Ferry, John Brown's raid 44
 Harrisonburg, Va. 60
 Harrison, Judge 19
 Harris, Peggy 36
 Hawpe, M. Elizabeth 165
 Heatwole, Gabriel 59
 Hemmingway, Ernest 90
Herbert Hoover in the White House:
 The Ordeal of the Presidency 155
 Her, Daniel 59
 Hi-Fi 120
 Hillcrest (of Staunton) 144
 Hill Farmstead Brewery 160
 Hilton Head, S.C. 76
 Hindenburg Line 87
 Hobin, Jim 1
 Hodges family 41
 Hofstra, Warren R. 148
 Holland, Milton 78
 Hollar, George 59; Philip 59; Robert 59
 Holms, Evelina 79
 Holt, Jane S. 121
 Home Guard of Virginia Volunteers 94
 Honey Hill, Battle of 76
 Hoover, Herbert 155
 Hopkins, Chertsey 5; Nanette 1, 5; Orra 5
 Hotchkiss, Jedediah 48, 49, 142
 Housekeepers Sunshine Club 118, 120
 Howell's Brigade 76
 Huffer, Donna 75
 Hulvey, Charles Nelson 87
 Humbert, Samuel 59
 Hunter, David 69, 71

I

Imboden, John 142
Informals 120
Integration in Staunton 120, 125
In Their Own Words: Growing Up in Segregated Staunton and Augusta County 144

J

Jackson, Andrew 54, 56; Robert 33; Stone-wall 45, 179
Jackson County Historical Society 179
James Madison University 135
James River and Kanawha Canal 50
Jefferson, Thomas 54, 100, 103, 123
Jeffries, Thomas 165
Jemison, T. J. 109
Jim Crow South 21, 100, 101, 102, 108
John Kline Among His Brethren or How He Filled His Place 62
Johnson, Calvin 31
Johnson family 41
Johnston, John 117
Joint Livestock Company in Staunton 50

K

Keckley, Elizabeth 156
Kennedy, J. S. 108
Keyes, Warren 26, 27
Kier family 35
King and Queen County 78
King, Lacy B., Jr. 122
Kitty Hawk 153, 154
Kivlighan, James 1
Kivlighan, Michael E. 121
Kiwanis Disc Golf Course 100, 134
Kline, Christian 58, 62, 63, 69, 71, 72; Frederick 72; John 61, 62, 63; Joseph M. 72; Martin 72
Knightly Mill 69
Krakowski, Adam 160
Kushnir, Andrei 147

L

La Follette, Robert 159
Lambert, C. W. 94
Lancaster, John 121, 126
Landes, Edith 15
Lara, Aaron and Catherine 45
Latané (surname) 4

Lee, Maria 41; Robert E. 45, 46, 48, 76, 150
Leonard, Victoria 98
Let the People Rule: Theodore Roosevelt and the Birth of the Presidential Primary 159
Lewis, Ann Montgomery 98, 102; Robert 31; Walter M. 29; Walter Mason 27
Lewis Mountain Negro area for camping 101
Liberty Loan drives 93
Library of Virginia 5
Liddick, Morgan 86
Lilienthal, Otto 154
Lincoln, Abraham 158; Mary Todd 156
Longdale Recreation Area 101
Looney, Harvey D. 18
Lovell, Seth 34
Lusitania 91

M

MacArthur, Douglas 27
Madison, James 55, 100, 103
Maps, local 170, 178, 179
Marshall, John 55
Martin, J. T. 13; Oscar 18
Mary Baldwin 142, 148, 156, 166, 169
Mason, Barry 75; David 75
Masons 120
Mathews County, Va. 78
Matron's Progressive Club 118
McCauley, Haywood 33
McClure, Alexander K. 142
McCormick, John F. 89
McCullough, David 153
McDonald, A. G. 4
McDowell, Battle of 45
McDowell, James 56
McMahon, Major 49
Mead, Margaret 144
Medical College of Virginia 1
Medical Reserve Corps 96
Medical Volunteer Service Corps 96
Merillat House 45
Métraux, Daniel A. 142
Meuse-Argonne 87
Michie family 41
Middlesex County 78
Miller, Benjamin 59; Christian 59; Daniel 59, 72; Daniel M. 59; David M. 63, 64, 68; Jacob 59; John T. 119; Joseph A. 59, 63; Nancy 72; William J. 150
Mills, local 170
Miner, George 76
Moats, Ella Rica 118

Moker, George 84; Marshall 84; Preston 84; William 82
 Monroe, James 55
 Monterey, Va. 65
 Montgomery Avenue 99
 Montgomery Hall Park 98-141
 Montgomery Hall Park Administrative Building 126; barn site ruins 130; bathhouse 130; Beauty Pageant 120; Bowling Alley 115; Committee 118, 125; fire of 1906 122; horseshoe pit 131; Labor Day celebration 120; main playground 132; outbuildings 100; renovation 126, 128; reopening, 1975 121; Swimming Pool 116; springhouse ruins 130
 Moorefield, West Virginia 60
 Morrison, Allegra 91
 Morton, Tom 33
 Mount Jackson, Va. 60
 Mount Sidney High School 178
 Mt. Zion Baptist Church 109, 114
 Mt. Zion Baptist Church Boy Scout Troop No. 56 115

N

NAACP, 120
 Nair, Charles E. 62
 National Cemetery 23
 National Defense Act in WW I 93
 National Express Transportation 49
 National Hotel 43
 National Register of Historic Places 98, 138
National Republican 3 54
 Native Americans in Virginia 149
 Natural Bridge 48
 Negro Recreation Committee 109, 110, 111
 Neiswander, Henry 59
 New Kent Court House 78
 New Market Heights, Battle of 75, 76, 78
 New Orleans, Battle of 1815 54
 newspapers, local 165, 167, 169, 173, 176, 177, 179
 North Carolina State College of Agriculture and Engineering 88
 North-East Station, N.C., Battle of 75

O

Oaks, The 48
 Obama, Barack 146
 O'Ferrall, Charles Triplett 46

Oh, Shenandoah: Paintings of the Historic Valley and River 147
 Oklahoma, University of 87
 Olustee, Battle of 76
 Onyx Club 120
 Opie, Hierome 95
 Orange, Alexandria, and Manassas Railroad 48

P

Painter, Karen F. 121
 Paley, Kennedy 75
 Pancake, Frank 122
 Parrish, Robert 25, 26
 Patrick, Melissa 21, 34
 Peace Principles of the Brethren 58
 Pearl Harbor 21
 Peck, Henry Dwight 107
 Pendleton, Landon 30, 32
 Perry, W. J. 93
 Petersburg, Battle of 76; Second Battle of 75
 Peyton, Anne Hooe 136; John Howe 98, 100, 102, 103, 123, 125, 136; John Lewis 100, 125
 Peyton family 136
 Pifer, Evelyn 14; Robert 78
 Pittard, William B., III 152
 Pompey, Daniel 75
 Porterfield, General 103
 Prince Edward Lake 101
 Prohibition in Vermont 160
 Prophylaxis 11

R

Railroads in the Shenandoah Valley 47
 Rappleye, Charles 155
 Rasmussen, William M. S. 148
 Ratliff, CR Lee 21, 24, 25
 Red Cross, Augusta Branch 91
 Republican Party 158
 Reserve Officers Training Corps 93
 Richardson, Albert 33
Richmond Times Dispatch 12
 Richmond, Va. 65
 Richmond, Battle of 76
 Ringgold Barracks 76
 Robert E. Lee High School 145
 Robinson, Bernice 118; Patsy B. 121
 Rockbridge Historical Society 175
 Rockingham County 152
 Roller, Charles Summerville 86; Charles Summerville, Jr. 86

Roosevelt, Franklin D. 155; Theodore 159
Rose Hill Garden Club 120
Rosser, Thomas 150
Round Hill School 36

S

Saint Stephens 76
Sandy Swamp 78
Scott, Al 34; William H. 78
Second National Bank 49
Segregation (Staunton and Augusta) 144
Seymour, General 76
Sheffey, Daniel 103; H. W. 43
Shenandoah National Park, 101
Shenandoah Valley 91, 150
Sheridan, Philip 70, 150
Sherman, William T. 76, 78
Sherwood Avenue (Staunton) 8, 9
Showalter, Isaac 59; Jackson 59
Shumate, William J. 105
Slavery in Augusta County 44, 46
Smith, Al 155; Chester 33
Smithsonian Institution 154
Smith's Transfer 175
Sorrells, Nancy 98
Sorrels, Jinnie 49
Southern Claims Commission 58, 69
South Mills 78
Spear, Samuel 78
Springel Softball Field 130
Sproul, Hugh B. III 151
Stanley, John M. 49
Statler Brothers 168
Staunton 57, 65, 135; Civil War 142; Parks
and Recreation Department 98
Staunton Manufacturing Company 174
Staunton Military Academy 92
Staunton Spectator 51, 55, 56
Steephill 125
Sterilization act of 1933 (Nazi) 12
Sterilization Act of Virginia 12
Sterilization practices 9
St. Mihiel offensive, WW I 87
Stonewall Jackson Hotel 148
Stover, John Hatch 177
Strausbaugh, John 157
Strother, W. J. 19
Stuart, Alexander H. H. 42, 45, 46, 50, 56;
Archibald 123; Henry 94; Judge 56
Stuart House 123, 124
Sugar Loaf, Battle of 75
Summersville, Thomas 86
Sunshine Circle 118

Supin Lick Mountain 152
Swartz, John 59
Sweetwater College 87

T

Taft, William Howard 159
Tammany Hall 158
Tate, Oliver 21, 28, 30; William 43
Taylor, Eugenia Becks 116; George
109, 110
*That's Just The Way It Was: A Chronological
and Documentary History of Afri-
can-American Schools in Staunton
and Augusta County* 144
*The Olive Branch of Peace and Goodwill to
Men* 59
Thomas, A. C. 109, 110; Alexander 108;
Charles 22; Esquire 79; George 79
Thomas-Fields VFW Post 7814 21-40
Thoreau, Henry David 153
Thurman, W.C. 58
Tom's Brook, Battle of 150
Trinity Church 9
Truman, Harry 30
Trump, Donald 57
Turner's Cornet Band 44
Turner, William 76
Tuskegee Airmen 29
Twin Lakes State Park. 101

U

Uckerd, Blanch 79; Edward 79; Frank 79;
John 78, 79; William 79; John 76
USS Cythera 22
USS Dextrous 25
USS Guadalcanal 25
USS Moctobi 25
USS Pillsbury 24

V

Valley of Virginia 143
Valley Pike 48
Valley Railroad 50
Valley Turnpike Company 164
Valley Vocational Technical School 31
*Vermont Prohibition: Teetotalers, Bootleggers,
and Corruption* 160
Veterans of Foreign Wars (VFW) 21-40,
120
VFW Post 2216 (Thomas-Fields) 21-40
VFW Auxiliary 14, 36

Vikings in Virginia 149
 Virginia, University of 88
 Virginia Central Railroad 47
 Virginia Department of Historic Resources 135
 Virginia Female Institute 104
 Virginia Hotel 43, 49
Virginia Magazine of History and Biography 177
 Virginia Military Institute 104
 Virginia National Guard 93
 Virginia Polytechnic Institute 88
 Virginia State Epileptic Colony 1
 Volstead Act 161

W

Waddell family 56
 Waddell, Joseph 55, 142; Lyttelton 56
 Walker, James 32; Joe 32, 33; Joseph Edward 145; C. J. 109; Ruth W. 121
 Walter, Emma 107; Frank 107, 122
 Wampler, John 72
 War Department of the United States 93
 Ware, A. R. 114
 War of 1812 54, 103
 Warren, Bates 107, 108, 124
 War Tax Law of 1914 96
 Washington College 104
 Washington Park, Charlottesville 101
 Washington, Willie S. 120

Webster, Daniel 55
 Wenger, Martin 59
 Western Lunatic Asylum 104
 Western State Hospital 1, 6, 9, 11, 95, 176
 Whig Party 54
 Wild, Edward 78
 William of Ockham 86
 Wilmington, N.C., Battle of 75
 Wilson, Woodrow 86, 91, 96
 Wine, Daniel 59; George S. 59; Samuel 59
 Wise, Jesse 78
 Witch, John 75, 76
 Witt, Evelyn 89
 Woodrow Wilson General Hospital 178
 Woodrow Wilson Rehabilitation Center 164
 Woodson, Dave 16
 Woodstock, Va. 60
 World War I 86-90, 91-97; ag production during 91
 World War II 168, 178
 Wormsley, Daniel 29
 Wright, Katherine 153; Orville 153; Wilbur 153

Y

Yates, John 72
 YLDA 120
 YMCA 94
 Young Men's Progressive Club 120
 Yount, J. B., III 174

AUGUSTA COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY 2017 OFFICERS

President - Charles R. Chittum
President-Elect - open
Recording Secretary - Michael McCray
Treasurer - Katherine Crow
Archivist - Dr. Ken Keller
Associate Archivist - J. Susanne Simmons
Past President - Linda Petzke

DIRECTORS

2016	2017	2018
Rick Wimer	Christiana Shields	Kimberly McCray
Bob Kuykendall	J. Susanne Simmons	Daniel Métraux
Doug Cochran	Von Hardesty ..	Nancy Sorrells

STANDING COMMITTEES

Augusta Historical Bulletin— Dr. Katharine Brown & Nancy Sorrells, Editors;
Daniel A. Métraux, Associate Editor and Book Review Editor

Archives — Dr. Ken Keller, Archivist; J. Susanne Simmons, Associate Archivist

Newsletter — Lucinda Cooke, Editor

Publicity — Doug Cochran

Office manager: Carter Douglass

Office hours: Tues., Thurs., Friday 9 a.m.-noon;

Wed. 9 a.m.-noon (Call first about Wednesday visits)

Other visits by appointment.

Office phone: 540-248-4151

Website: www.augustacountyhs.org

Email: augustachs@ntelos.net

Mailing address: P.O. Box 686, Staunton, VA 24402

Augusta County Historical Society office and research library are located on the third floor of the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art at 20 South New Street, Staunton, VA 24401. A parking garage is located across the street.

For more information about membership, Society resources, visiting the reserach library, publications for sale, or upcoming events, visit www.augustacountyhs.org

Augusta County Historical Society & Augusta County Genealogical Society Family Heritage Program

The Augusta County Historical Society joins with the Augusta County Genealogical Society to offer with pride a family heritage recognition program for those whose family roots extend to the early years of the county, and who wish to submit their line of descent to complement the growing archives of the two societies.

Three types of membership in Augusta Pioneers are recognized. *First Families* of Augusta County is the membership category for those whose ancestors settled in the county in the period from its founding in 1738 (or before) to the year 1800. *Pioneer Families* of Augusta County is for those whose forbears settled in Augusta County in the nineteenth century, that is between the years 1801 and 1900. *Junior Pioneers* of Augusta County recognizes young people from the cradle to age eighteen who are descendants of First Families or Pioneer Families.

If you believe that you are qualified to be an Augusta Pioneer or if you would also like to enroll young family members—children, grandchildren, nieces and nephews—simply send in the form below to receive the application. Completed applications will be checked and then certified by the societies' boards that you have been accepted for membership in either First Families of Augusta County, Pioneer Families of Augusta County, or Junior Pioneers of Augusta County. The application genealogy files become a part of the archives of the Augusta County Historical Society and the Augusta County Genealogical Society and will be made available to family researchers.

All members will receive a handsome matted certificate of membership, suitable for framing. Membership in Augusta Pioneers is a one-time recognition that lasts a lifetime. Once the initial application fee is paid, there are no annual dues assessed. The fee for membership in Augusta Pioneers is a flat \$50 for descent from one ancestor. Additional ancestors may be added for \$20 each. The junior member enrollment fee is \$20. Upon reaching the age of eighteen, junior members can elect to pay the additional \$30 to become full-fledged members.

____ Yes! I am interested in becoming a member of the Augusta County Family Heritage Program Please send the official application form and instructions for its completion to:

Name _____
Street _____
City _____ State _____ Zip _____
Phone _____
e-mail _____

*Please note that you may also print this same form from our website **www.augustacountyhs.org***

***Mail the form to: Augusta County Historical Society, Attn.:
Family Heritage Program, P.O. Box 686, Staunton, VA 24402-0686

